ythology Photography Fiction Fishi
Christianity Art Cooking Essays
ddhism Freemasonry Medicine Biol
Music Ancient Egypt Evolution
Geography Physics Dance Geology
Mathematics Fitness Shakespeare
Marketing Communications
Immortality Biographies Poetry
Psychology Witchcraft Electronics
Chemistry History Law Accounting
ilosophy Anthropology Alchemy Dra
Quantum Mechanics Atheism Sexu
onal Health Ancient History Crimin
Entrepreneurship Languages Sport
Paleontology Neuroscience Islam
Metaphysics Investment Archaeology

Forgotten Books

www.forgottenbooks.com

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

The Jesuit Relations and Allied Documents

TRAVELS AND EXPLORATIONS OF THE JESUIT MISSIONARIES IN NEW FRANCE

1610-1791

THE ORIGINAL FRENCH, LATIN, AND ITALIAN TEXTS, WITH ENGLISH TRANSLATIONS AND NOTES; ILLUSTRATED BY PORTRAITS, MAPS, AND FACSIMILES

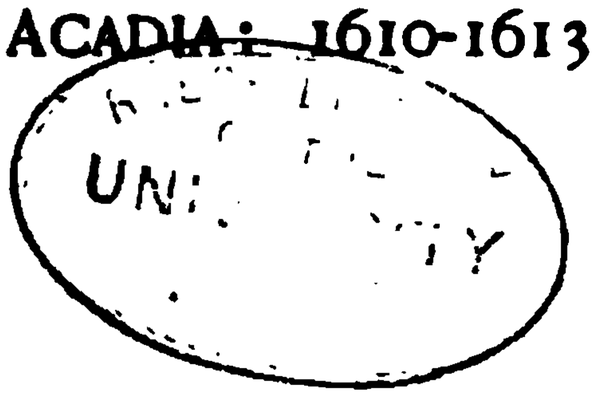
EDITED BY

REUBEN GOLD THWAITES

Secretary of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin

Vol. I

ACADIA: 1610-1613



CLEVELAND: The Burrows Brothers Company, PUBLISHERS, M DCCC XCVI

REFSE - .C.

COPYRIGHT, 1896
BY
THE BURROWS BROTHERS CO

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

The Imperial Press, Cleveland

EDITORIAL STAFF

Editor . .	REUBEN GOLD THWAITES
Translator from the French . .	JOHN CUTLER COVERT
Assistant Translator from the French .	MARY SIFTON PEPPER
Translators from the Latin . .	WILLIAM FREDERIC GIESE JOHN DORSEY WOLCOTT
Translator from the Italian .	MARY SIFTON PEPPER
Assistant Editor .	EMMA HELEN BLAIR

GENERAL PREFACE

The story of New France is also, in part, the story of much of New England, and of States whose shores are washed by the Great Lakes and the Mississippi River. It may truly be said that the history of every one of our northern tier of commonwealths, from Maine to Minnesota, has its roots in the French régime. It is not true, as Bancroft avers, that the Jesuit was ever the pioneer of New France; we now know that in this land, as elsewhere in all ages, the trader nearly always preceded the priest. But the trader was not often a letter-writer or a diarist; hence, we owe our intimate knowledge of New France, particularly in the seventeenth century, chiefly to the wandering missionaries of the Society of Jesus. Coming early to the shores of Nova Scotia (1611), nearly a decade before the landing of the Plymouth Pilgrims, and eventually spreading throughout the broad expanse of New France, ever close upon the track of the adventurous coureur de bois, they met the American savage before contact with civilization had seriously affected him. With heroic fortitude, often with marvellous enterprise, they pierced our wilderness while still there were but Indian trails to connect far-distant villages of semi-naked aborigines. They saw North America and the North Americans practically in the primitive

stage. Cultivated men, for the most part,—trained to see as well as to think, and carefully to make record of their experiences,—they left the most luxurious country in Europe to seek shelter in the foul and unwelcome huts of one of the most wretched races of man. To win these crude beings to the Christian Faith, it was necessary to know them intimately, in their daily walks. No coureur de bois was more expert in forest lore than were the Jesuit Fathers; and the records made by these soldiers of the Cross,—explicit and detailed, while familiar in tone,—are of the highest scientific value, often of considerable literary interest. The body of contemporary, documentary material which, in their *Relations* and Letters, the Jesuits of New France have bequeathed to the historian, the geographer, and the ethnologist, entitles them to the enduring gratitude of American scholars. For forty years, these documents have, in part, been more or less familiar to Americanists as a rich storehouse of material. But, hitherto, they have existed only in rare and costly forms, when in print at all,—as original products of ancient French, Italian, and German presses, or as reprints issued in sparse number for small circles of bibliophiles; while many important papers, capable of throwing light upon certain portions of Canadian history hitherto in shade, have as yet remained in manuscript.

We cannot promise for this series the entire body of existing Jesuit documents, either printed or in manuscript, which illustrate the history of New France in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. This would carry us, even were they all obtainable, far beyond the necessary limits of this series; for the fathers were profuse writers, and their papers are in

many archives. It is of necessity a matter of selection. We shall, however, reissue all of the documents usually designated as *Relations*,— the Cramoisys, the Quebec reissue, the Shea and O'Callaghan reprints; and to these will be added a very considerable collection of miscellaneous papers of importance, from printed sources and from manuscripts, in order to fill the chronological gaps and round out and complete the story. It is the purpose of the Editor to present this mass of selected material in chronological order, so far as proves practicable, and to furnish such scholarly helps as will tend to render it more available than hitherto for daily use by students of American history. To this end will be given an English translation, side by side with the original text. While translations of many of the briefest documents, and of portions of others, have already appeared in one form or other, this is the first attempt to translate the entire body of the *Relations*. In many cases, where corruptions in text have crept in, we shall be enabled, by recourse to original manuscripts, to restore correct renderings; this care has been taken, wherever practicable, even to the examination of manuscripts in European archives; but occasionally we shall be obliged to follow our predecessors blindly in this regard, either from inability to discover the whereabouts of the original, or to obtain access to it, when found. In the case of each document, we shall invariably state the source whence we obtained our copy, and shall give additional bibliographical data as to other editions known to us. All maps and other illustrations appearing in previous editions will be reproduced in this; and these will be supplemented by other important con-

temporary aids of like character. At the end of each volume will appear such Notes as seem necessary to the elucidation of the text. The closing volume of the series will contain — and probably will be wholly devoted to — an exhaustive analytical Index, a feature without which the work would lose much of its value. In short, no pains have been, or will be, spared to render all possible service to scholars, in the present work. But the field is wide, the difficulties are many, and the Editor makes no claims to perfection. He will be grateful to any who, in the course of publication, — promising to extend through several years yet to come, — will offer helpful suggestions in any department of the undertaking.

While seeking to reproduce the old texts as closely as practicable, with their legitimate typographic and orthographic peculiarities, it has been found advisable here and there to make a few minor changes. The original printer was sometimes careless, — Cramoisy especially so, — and his proof-reader negligent. The result was that certain typographical errors crept into the original prints, — errors not of the author's making, and therefore not illustrative of his methods. These consist in the main, of: (1) turned letters; (2) transposed letters; (3) slipped letters; and (4) mis-spacings. To these obvious errors may be added such as, e. g., mistaking the verb *gratter* for *grauer*, evidently through a failure on the part of the writer to cross his t's, — the context plainly showing what was written; the printing, e. g., of *beaucoup* for *beaucoup;* or the repetition on the next line of a syllable in a divided word, resulting in such a redundancy as, *poupouuant* for *pouuant*. Palpable blemishes like these, we have deemed it advisable to

correct without specific mention; in some instances, however, the original error has been retained, and in juxtaposition the correct rendering given within brackets.

Another and more annoying class of errors is, the wrong numbering of chapters and pages in the old issues, chiefly the fruit of carelessness in make-up. We indicate, throughout, the original pagination, by inclosing within brackets the number of each page at its beginning, e. g. [148]; in case of misnumbering, the correct figure is also given, e. g. [150, i. e. 149]. A similar device is adopted as to chapter misnumbering, e. g. Chapitre XXX. [i. e. XXIX.].

A difference in the typographic style of the documents presented in the present series, will occasionally be noticed. In following originals of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, we have of course reproduced their peculiarities, such as the long "s," and character diphthongs; but where our sole copy has been a modern reprint, in a modern typographic dress, we have followed its style, deeming it inadvisable, for mere sake of uniformity, to masquerade the document in olden guise.

In the progress of the work, which has now been under way for some sixteen months, many persons beside the present staff have tendered helping hands. To them, the Editor returns, for the Publishers and for himself, grateful acknowledgment. It is impracticable to name them all in this place; but of a few from whom special favors have been received, it is only just to speak: The Reverend Arthur E. Jones, S. J., archivist of St. Mary's College, Montreal, from the first opened his heart to this enterprise, and has not only given us *carte*

blanche to ransack his priceless stores, but has contributed invaluable suggestions and data, almost without number. To Wilberforce Eames, librarian of Lenox Library, and his assistant, Victor H. Paltsits, we owe much; for in their institution the greater part of the transcription is being done, and their daily courtesies and kindnesses materially lighten the task. Superintendent Robbins Little, and Librarian Frederick Saunders, of Astor Library, have also been of much assistance in the conduct of the work. To John Nicholas Brown, of Providence, R. I., and to his librarian, George Parker Winship, we are indebted for numerous courtesies and suggestions during the copying and photographing of documents in the John Carter Brown Library of Americana. Similar aid is being rendered by Dr. Justin Winsor, of Harvard College Library, and his assistants, W. H. Tillinghast and T. J. Kiernan; by the librarians of St. Francis Xavier College, New York, and the Jesuit Colleges at Georgetown, D. C., and Woodstock, Md.; by L. P. Sylvani, assistant librarian of the Library of Parliament, Ottawa; and by C. H. Gould, librarian of McGill University Library, Montreal, and his assistant, Henry Mott. Donald Guthrie McNab, of Montreal, has kindly permitted us to photograph and reproduce his excellent oil portraits of the early fathers; and, in this connection, we feel under especial obligations to Messrs. Notman & Son, of Montreal, for their intelligent advice and patience in photographing paintings and manuscripts for the series. Marked privileges have been granted by the officials of the Bibliothèque Nationale and the Bibliothèque de l'Arsenal, of Paris. Numerous antiquarians have rendered generous aid, notably Peter A.

Porter, of Niagara Falls, N. Y.; W. M. Beauchamp, of Baldwinsville, N. Y.; l'Abbé H. A. B. Verreau, of Montreal; Mgr. T. E. Hamel, of Quebec; and A. F. Hunter, of Barrie, Ontario. Further acknowledgment of assistance will be rendered in the several volumes, as they appear.

R. G. T.

MADISON, WIS., August, 1896.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I

GENERAL PREFACE . . . vii

HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION. *The Editor* 1

PREFACE TO VOLUME I . . 45

DOCUMENTS:—

I. La Conversion des Savvages qui ont esté baptizés en la Novvelle France, cette annee 1610. *Marc Lescarbot* . . 49

II. Lettre Missive, tovchant la Conversion et bapteſme du grand Sagamos de la nouuelle Frãce. *M. Bertrand;* Port Royal, June 28, 1610 . . . 115

III. Lettre au T.-R. P. Claude Aquaviva, Général de la Compagnie de Jésus, à Rome. *Pierre Biard;* Dieppe, January 21, 1611 125

IV. Lettre au R. P. Christophe Baltazar, Provincial de France, à Paris. *Pierre Biard;* Port Royal, June 10, 1611 . 138

V. Lettre au R. P. Provincial, à Paris. *Ennemond Massé;* Port Royal, June 10, 1611 184

VI. Lettre au T.-R. P. Claude Aquaviva. *Pierre Biard;* Port Royal, June 11, 1611 188

VII. Canadicæ Miſſionis Relatio ab anno 1611 uſque ad annum 1613, cum ſtatu ejuſdem Miſſionis, annis 1703 & 1710. *Joseph Jouvency* 193

VIII. De Regione et Moribus Canadenſium ſeu Barbarorum Novæ Franciæ. *Joseph Jouvency* 239

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL DATA: Volume I . . 299

NOTES . . 305

ILLUSTRATIONS TO VOL. I

I. Photographic facsimile of title-page, Lescarbot's *La Conversion des Savvages* . 52

II. Photographic facsimile of title-page, Bertrand's *Lettre Missive* . . . 118

III. Map of Port Royal (1609), from Lescarbot's *Histoire de la Nouvelle France* (Paris, 1612) . . . . . *Facing* 124

IV. Map of "La Terre Nevve, Grand Riviere de Canada, et côtes de l'Ocean en la Novvelle France," from *Ibid* . . *Facing* 192

V. Historical map of New France, showing missions, forts, portage-routes, tribes, etc . . . . . *At end of volume*

INTRODUCTION

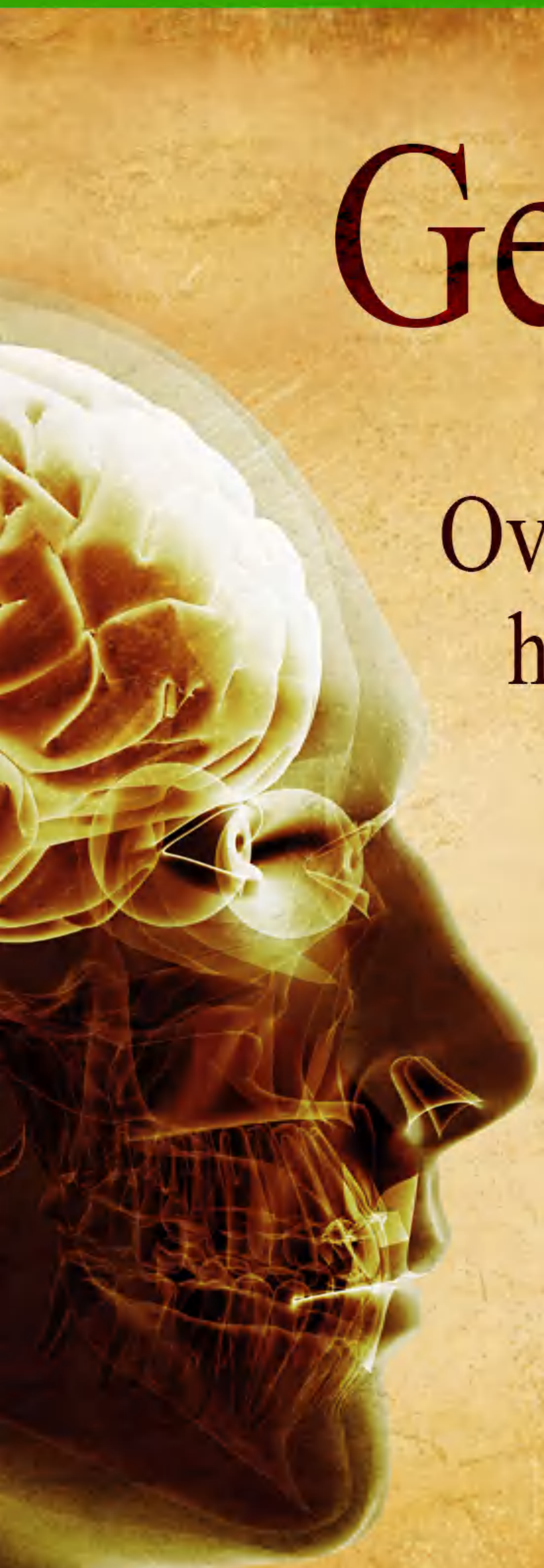
BY REUBEN GOLD THWAITES

Doubtless Norse vikings, venturing far southward from outlying colonies in Iceland and Greenland, first coasted New France, and beached their sturdy ships on the shores of New England. But five centuries passed without result, and we cannot properly call them pioneers of American civilization. Columbus it was, who unlocked the eastern door of the New World. Five years later, John Cabot, in behalf of England, was sighting the gloomy headlands of Cape Breton. Cortereal appeared in the neighborhood, in 1501, seeking lands for the Portuguese crown. About this time, at intervals, there came to Newfoundland certain Norman, Breton, and Basque fishers, who, erecting little huts and drying-scaffolds along the rocky shore, sowed the first seed of that polyglot settlement of French, Portuguese, Spanish, and English which has come down to our day almost uninterruptedly. By 1511, these fishermen appear to have known the mainland to the west; for on the map of Sylvanus, in his edition of Ptolemy, that year, we find a delineation of the "Square Gulf," which answers to the Gulf of St. Lawrence. In 1520, Fagundus visited these waters for the Por-

tuguese, and four years later Verrazano was making for the French an exploration of the coast between North Carolina and Newfoundland. Whether or not Cartier (1535) was the first to sail up the St. Lawrence "until land could be seen on either side," no man can now tell; apparently, he was the first to leave a record of doing so. Progress up the river was checked by Lachine Rapids, and he spent the winter on Montreal Island.

France and Spain were just then engaged in one of their periodical quarrels, and adventurers were needed to fight battles at home, so that it was six years before any attempts were made to colonize the river-lands to which Cartier had led the way. In 1541, a Picard seigneur named Roberval, enjoying the friendship of Francis I., was commissioned as viceroy of the new country beyond the Atlantic, with Cartier as his chief pilot and captain-general, and a choice selection of jail-birds for colonists. Cartier started off before his chief, built a fort at Quebec, and, after a long and miserable winter, picked up a quantity of glittering stones which he took to be gold and diamonds, and gladly set sail for home. Tradition has it that Roberval met him near the mouth of the river, but was unable to induce him to return to his cheerless task of founding a state in an inhospitable wilderness, with convicts for citizens. Roberval, however, proceeded to Quebec with his consignment of prison dregs, and throughout another protracted winter the flag of France floated from the little intrenched camp which Cartier had planted on the summit of the cliff. Roberval's principal occupation appears to have been the disciplining of his unruly followers, a work in which the gibbet and

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

at Paris. In 1590, the Marquis de la Roche was sent out with the usual dissolute crew to succeed Roberval as the king's agent on the banks of the St. Lawrence. Leaving part of his ill-favored gang on the desert Sable Isle, off Nova Scotia (where early in the century Baron de Léry had vainly attempted to plant a colony), La Roche set forth to explore the mainland for a site. A wild storm blew his vessels to France, and the wretched skin-clad survivors of the band which he had left behind were not rescued until thirteen years had elapsed. Their tale of horror long rang in the ears of France.

In 1600–1603, Chauvin and Pontgravé made successful trading voyages to the St. Lawrence. Samuel de Champlain was one of the party which, in the latter year, followed in Cartier's track to Montreal. The same season, a Calvinist, named De Monts, was given the vice-royalty and fur-trade monopoly of Acadia, and in 1604 he landed a strangely-assorted company of vagabonds and gentlemen on St. Croix Island, near the present boundary between Maine and New Brunswick; but in the spring following they settled at Port Royal, near where is now Annapolis, Nova Scotia, thus planting the first French agricultural settlement in America. Five years later, Champlain reared a permanent post on the rock of Quebec, and New France was at last, after a century of experiments, fairly under way.

Various motives influenced the men who sought to establish French colonization in America. The ill-fated agricultural colony of the Huguenots in Florida (1562–68), was avowedly an attempt of Admiral Coligny to found an enduring asylum for French Protestants. The enterprise of New France,

on the other hand, was the outgrowth of interests more or less conflicting. Doubtless the court had deepest at heart the kingly passion for territorial aggrandizement; next uppermost, was the pious wish to convert heathen nations to the Catholic faith, explorers like Cartier being authorized to discover new lands "in order the better to do what is pleasing to God, our Creator and Redeemer, and what may be for the increase of his holy and sacred name, and of our holy mother, the Church;" the desire for pelf, through the agency of the fur trade, and the possibility of the discovery of precious metals, gave commercial zest to the undertaking, and to many was the *raison d'être* of the colony; and lastly, was the almost universal yearning for adventure, among a people who in the seventeenth century were still imbued with that chivalric temper which among Englishmen is assigned to the Middle Ages. The inner life of New France, throughout its century and a half of existence, was largely a warring between these several interests.

Missionaries came early upon the scene. With the Calvinist De Monts were Huguenot ministers for the benefit of the settlers, and Catholic priests to open a mission among the savages, for the court had stipulated with him that the latter were to be instructed only in the faith of Rome. But no missionary work was done, for the colony was through several years on the verge of dissolution, and the priests became victims of scurvy. Poutrincourt, who held under De Monts the patent for Port Royal, did nothing to further the purposes of the court in this regard, until 1610, when, admonished for his neglect, he brought out with him a secular priest, Messire

Jessé Fléché, of Langres, who on June 24, "apparently in some haste," baptized twenty-one Abenakis, including the district sagamore, or chief. The account of this affair, which Poutrincourt sent in triumph to France, is the initial document in the present series.

On the twelfth of June, 1611, there arrived at Port Royal, at the instance of King Henry IV., two Jesuit fathers, Pierre Biard and Ennemond Massé. They were, however, not favorably received by Poutrincourt and his followers; they found great practical difficulties in acquiring the Indian languages, and made slight progress in the herculean task to which they had been set. To them came, the following year, a lay brother, Gilbert du Thet, who was soon dispatched to the head of the order, in France, with an account of the situation. In the spring of 1613, he returned, in company with Father Quentin. The little band of missionaries had no sooner established themselves at the new French colony on Mt. Desert Island, than the latter was attacked and dispersed by the Virginian Argall. Du Thet was killed in the fight, Massé was, with other colonists, set adrift in a boat, and Biard and Quentin were taken to Virginia, to be eventually shipped to England, and thence allowed to return into France. Several of the earlier documents of our series have to do with this first and apparently unfruitful mission of the Jesuits to Acadia.

In 1615, Champlain thought the time ripe for the institution of Indian missions upon the St. Lawrence, a spiritual field hitherto neglected, and introduced to Quebec four members of the fraternity of Récollets, the most austere of the three orders of

Franciscans; these were Fathers Denis Jamay, Jean d'Olbeau, and Joseph le Caron, and a lay brother, Pacifique du Plessis. To D'Olbeau was assigned the conversion of the Montagnais of the Lower St. Lawrence; Le Caron went to the Hurons, or Wyandots, in the vast stretch of forested wilderness west of the Ottawa River, and before the coming of autumn had established a bark chapel in their midst; Jamay and Du Plessis remained in the neighborhood of Quebec, ministering to the colonists and the wandering savages who came to the little settlement for purposes of trade or sociability, or through fear of scalp-hunting Iroquois. For ten years did these gray friars practice the rites of the church in the Canadian woods, all the way from the fishing and trading outpost of Tadoussac to the western Lake of the Nipissings. Barefooted, save for heavy wooden sandals, coarsely clad in gown and hood, enduring in a rigorous climate, to which they were unused, all manner of hardships by flood and field, they were earnestly devoted to their laborious calling in a time when elsewhere the air of New France was noisy with the strife of self-seeking traders and politicians. Yet somehow their mission seemed without important result. Even less successful was the enterprise of some fellow Récollets, who, in 1619, began independent work among the French fishermen and Micmacs of Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, and Gaspé, but were forced in 1624, after many disasters, to abandon their task, three of them joining the party at Quebec.

The little band on the St. Lawrence, although thus reinforced, felt impelled, in 1625, to invite the powerful aid of the Jesuits, who in the face of great odds

were just then holding most successful missions in Asia, Africa, and South America. In response to the call, three fathers of the black gown came to Quebec this year,—Massé, who had been of the old Acadian mission, Charles Lalemant, and that giant among them, in both stature and deeds, Jean de Brébeuf. Immediately the work began to broaden, but the records of the dual mission do not give evidence of many converts,—a few Huron youth taken to France, and there instructed and baptized, being the chief gains. The wandering habits of the Indians were not favorable to persistent instruction of the young, and adults were unwilling to commit themselves to the new doctrine, even when not openly opposed to its promulgation. The summer months were usually spent by the missionaries at Tadoussac, Quebec, and Three Rivers, where trading parties from the tribes were wont to assemble; and, when the latter scattered for their winter hunts, the missionaries accompanied them, sharing the toils, dangers, and discomforts of the movable camps, and often suffering much from positive abuse at the hands of their not over-willing hosts.

The settlements of Port Royal and Quebec were at this time wretched little hamlets of a few dozen huts each, surrounded by a palisade, and these fell an easy prey to small English naval forces (1628–29). With their fall, ended the slender mission of the Récollets and Jesuits, who were in triumph carried off to England. For a few months, France did not hold one foot of ground in North America. But as peace had been declared between France and England before this conquest, the former received back all of its possessions, and the inevitable struggle for the mastery of the

continent was postponed for four generations longer.

With the release of Canada to France, in 1632, the Jesuits were by the home authorities placed in sole charge of the spiritual interests of both settlers and Indians, and the history of their greatest missions begins at this time. On the fifth of July, there landed at Quebec, Fathers Paul le Jeune and Anne de Nouë, and a lay brother named Gilbert. Le Jeune was the superior, and at once devoted himself to learning the language and customs of the savages, and so studying the enormous field before him as intelligently to dispose of his meagre forces.

The Indians.

The existence of rival tribes among the Red Indians of North America, was, perhaps, the most formidable obstacle in the path of the missionaries. It has always been impossible to make any hard-and-fast classification; yet the Indians presented a considerable variety of types, ranging from the Southern Indians, some of whose tribes were in a relatively high stage of material advancement and mental calibre, down to the savage root-eaters of the Rocky Mountain region. The migrations of some of the Indian tribes were frequent, and they occupied overlapping territories, so that it is impossible to fix the tribal boundaries with any degree of exactness. Again, the tribes were so [illegible]ed by intermarriage, by affiliation, by consolida[illegible]y the fact that there were numerous polyglot villages of renegades, by similarities in manner, habits, and appearance, that it is difficult even to separate the savages into families. It is only on philological grounds that these divisions can be made at all. In a general way

we may say that between the Atlantic and the Rockies, Hudson Bay and the Gulf of Mexico, there were four Indian languages in vogue, with great varieties of local dialect:

I. The Algonkins were the most numerous, holding the greater portion of the country from the unoccupied "debatable land" of Kentucky northward to Hudson Bay, and from the Atlantic westward to the Mississippi. Among their tribes were the Micmacs of Acadia, the Penobscots of Maine, the Montagnais of the St. Lawrence, the ill-defined tribes of the country round about Lake St. John, and the Ottawas, Chippewas, Mascoutens, Sacs, Foxes, Pottawattomies, and Illinois of the Upper Lakes. These savages were rude in life and manners, were intensely warlike, depended for subsistence chiefly on hunting and fishing, lived in rude wigwams covered with bark, skins, or matted reeds, practised agriculture in a crude fashion, and were less stable in their habitations than the Southern Indians. They have made a larger figure in our history than any other family, because through their lands came the heaviest and most aggressive movement of white population, French or English. Estimates of early Indian populations necessarily differ, in the absence of accurate knowledge; but it is now believed that the number was never so great as was at first estimated by the Jesuit fathers and the earliest English colonists. A careful modern estimate is, that the Algonkins at no time numbered over 90,000 souls, and possibly not over 50,000.

II. In the heart of this Algonkin land was planted the ethnic group called the Iroquois, with its several distinct branches, often at war with each other. The

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

hind the white proprietors in industrial or domestic methods, and numbered not above 50,000 persons. With them, this story of the Jesuit missions has little to do; the Louisiana mission, an offshoot of that of New France, did faithful work here, but the documentary result was neither as interesting nor as prolific, and necessarily occupies but small space in the present series.

IV. The Dakotah, or Sioux, family occupied for the most part the country beyond the Mississippi. They were and are a fierce, high-strung people, genuine nomads, and war appears to have been their chief occupation. The Jesuits worked among them but in slight measure, on the waters of the Upper Mississippi; they met this family chiefly in the persons of the Winnebagoes, one of their outlying bands, which at the time of the French occupation was resident on and about Green Bay of Lake Michigan, at peace and in confederacy with the Algonkins who hedged them about.

The mission of the French Jesuits to these widely-scattered hordes of savages forms one of the most thrilling chapters in human history. It is impossible, in this brief Introduction, to attempt anything more than the barest outline of the theme; Rochemonteix, Shea, and Parkman have told the story in detail, from differing points of view, and with these authorities the student of the following documents in the case is presumed to be familiar. A rapid summary of results will, however, be useful; and this we may best obtain, at the expense of occasional repetition of narrative, by following the fortunes of the pioneers of the Cross through the several district missions into which their work was naturally divided.

I. The Abenaki Mission.

This mission was chiefly in Maine and Acadia, and on Cape Breton Island. The Ąbenąkis (or Abnakis) were a strong but mild-mannered Algonkin tribe, settled in villages or cantonments; but, like others of their race, in the habit of taking long semi-annual journeys,—each winter to hunt, and each summer to fish. We have seen that the French Jesuits, Biard and Massé, were in the field as early as 1611, soon after the establishment of Port Royal; their predecessor being the secular French priest, Fléché, who had been introduced to the country by Poutrincourt, the patentee. Biard and Massé met with many discouragements, chiefly the opposition of Poutrincourt's son, Biencourt (sometimes called Baron St. Just), who had been left in charge of the colony. Nevertheless the missionaries learned the native language, and made many long journeys of exploration, one of Biard's trips extending as far as the mouth of the Kennebec. They were later joined by a lay brother, Du Thet, and by Fathers Quentin and Lalemant. Joining the new French colony on Mt. Desert Island, in the spring of 1613, the establishment was almost immediately destroyed by the Virginian Argall. In the skirmish, Du Thet was killed.

In 1619, a party of Récollets, from Aquitaine, began a mission on St. John River, in Acadia, but five years later, as we have seen above, abandoned the task, the survivors joining the Quebec mission of their order. Other Récollets were in Acadia, however, between 1630 and 1633, and later we have evidence of a small band of Capuchins ministering to French settlers on the Penobscot and Kennebec;

but it is probable that they made no attempt to convert the natives.

A Jesuit mission was founded on Cape Breton in 1634, by Father Julian Perrault; and a few years later, Father Charles Turgis was at Miscou. Other missionaries soon came to minister to the Micmacs, but for many years their efforts were without result; and sickness, resulting from the hardships of the situation, caused most of the early black gowns to retreat from the attempt. Finally, an enduring mission was established among these people, and, until about 1670, was conducted with some measure of success by Fathers Andrew Richard, Martin de Lyonne, and James Fremin. About 1673, the Récollets took up the now abandoned work, occasionally aided by secular priests from the Seminary of Quebec, and Jesuits, until at last the Micmacs from Gaspé to Nova Scotia were declared to be entirely converted to the Catholic faith.

Father Gabriel Druillettes, of the Jesuit mission at Sillery, near Quebec, went to the Kennebec country in 1646, invited thither by converted Abenakis who had been at Sillery, and during visits, extending through a period of eleven years, was more than ordinarily successful in the task of gaining Indian converts to Christianity. In 1650, he made a notable visit to the Puritans of Eastern Massachusetts, during which was discussed the proposed union between New France and New England, against the Iroquois. Upon the final departure of Druillettes in 1657, the Abenakis were but spasmodically served with missionaries; occasionally a Jesuit appeared among them, but the field could not be persistently worked, owing to the demands upon the order from other

quarters. The fathers now sought to draw Abenaki converts to Sillery, and later to St. Francis de Sales, at the falls of the Chaudière, which soon became almost exclusively an Abenaki mission.

In 1688, Father Bigot, of this mission, again entered the field of the Kennebec, at the same time that Rev. Peter Thury, a priest of the Quebec Seminary, opened a mission on the Penobscot, and the Récollet F. Simon gathered a flock at Medoktek, near the mouth of the St. John. They were in time aided and succeeded by others: the Jesuits being Julian Binneteau, Joseph Aubery, Peter de la Chasse, Stephen Lauverjeat, Loyard, and Sebastian Rale; the death of Rale, the greatest of them all, at the hands of New England partisans in the border strife of 1724, is a familiar incident in American history. Jesuits succeeded to the Penobscot mission in 1703, and with great zeal, but amid continual hardships and discouragements, carried on the principal work among the Abenakis until the downfall of New France in 1763. The majority of the Kennebec converts, however, emigrated to the mission of St. Francis de Sales, and from there frequently went forth upon avenging expeditions against the New England borderers.

II. The Montagnais Mission.

This was centered at Tadoussac, and ministered to the Montagnais, Bersiamites, Porcupines, Oumaniwek, Papinachois, and other tribes of the Lower St. Lawrence and the Saguenay. Tadoussac had, from the earliest historic times, been a favorite harbor and trading-station for the French; for, being at the junction of two great rivers, it was convenient as a

place of assembly for the natives of the lower country. The first priests in the district had said mass there; but it was not until 1640 that a Jesuit mission was formed by Father Jean du Quen, its sphere of influence soon reaching to the upper waters of the Saguenay, Lake St. John, Hudson Bay, and the coast of Labrador. Du Quen was actively assisted by Charles Meiachkwat, a Montagnais convert, who erected the first chapel, became a catechist, and made extended tours through the neighboring tribes. In time, there were associated with Du Quen, Fathers Buteux and Druillettes. Protracted missionary tours were made by them, with results which were considered satisfactory as compared with other missions; although they had serious difficulties to contend with, in the prevalent intemperance which the fur trade introduced among the natives, the belief in dreams, the laxity of morals, and the wiles of medicine-men, or sorcerers, as they were called by the Jesuits.

For the first few years, the missionaries spent their winters in Quebec, ministering to the colonists, and each spring went down to Tadoussac to meet the summer trading parties; but greater persistency of effort was deemed desirable, and thereafter, instead of returning home in the autumn, they followed the Indians upon their winter hunts, and in the course of these wanderings endured the usual privations and hardships of traveling camps. Bailloquet, Nouvel, Beaulieu, Albanel, De Crépieul, Dalmas, Boucher, Peter Michael Laure, and Jean Baptiste Labrosse, are other names of Jesuit fathers who at different periods were engaged upon this toilsome mission.

In 1670, Tadoussac was almost deserted, owing to Iroquois raids and the ravages of smallpox; the Mon-

tagnais and kindred tribes were in hiding, through the vast country between Lake St. John and Hudson Bay. They were still followed by their devoted shepherds, whom no hardship could discourage. The following year, Crépieul began a mission on Hudson Bay, and here in 1694 his auxiliary Dalmas was killed. Laure (1720–37) left us a monument of his labors in a Montagnais grammar and dictionary. Labrosse, the last of his order at Tadoussac, instructed many of his flock to read and write, and left a legacy of native education, which has lasted unto the present day; he lived and taught long after his order had been suppressed in New France, and died at Tadoussac in 1782.

III. The Quebec and Montreal Missions.

These included the several missions at Quebec, Montreal, Three Rivers, Sillery, Bécancourt, and St. Francis de Sales, which were designed for the wandering Montagnais of the district, those Algonkins of the West who could be induced to come and settle on the lower waters, and in later years such Abenakis of Acadia and Maine as sought an asylum upon distinctively French soil.

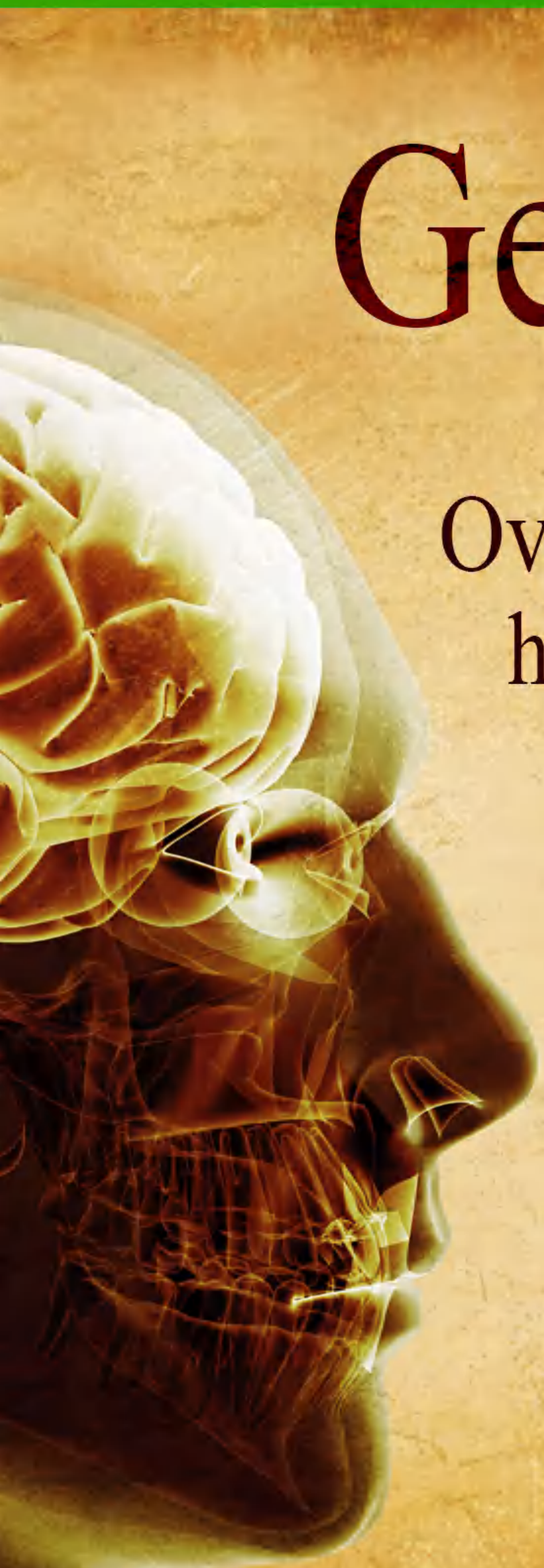
We have seen that Récollets were first at Quebec, ministering both to colonists and Indians, and that, in 1625, they invited the Jesuits to aid them. In 1629, the joint mission came to a close through the surrender of Quebec to the English. When the mission was reopened in 1632, Jesuits alone were in charge, their operations being at first confined to the neighboring Montagnais, although they soon spread throughout the entire Canadian field. In 1658, Bishop Laval founded the Seminary of Quebec,

whereupon the Jesuits resigned their parishes among the colonists, and thereafter confined themselves to their college and the Indian missions. In addition to their parish work, the priests of the seminary conducted missions in Acadia, Illinois, and on the lower Mississippi.

The year following the return of the Jesuits to Canada, Father Buteux, of that order, began his labors at Three Rivers, which was a convenient gathering-place for the fur trade. The village was frequently raided by Iroquois, but remained until the fall of New France one of the prominent centers of missionary influence. The efforts of Buteux, which lasted until his death at the hands of Iroquois in 1652, met with considerable success. His custom, like that of the other missionaries, was to be present at the French posts during the annual trading "meets," and when the savages returned to the wilderness, to accompany some selected band. In thus following the nomadic tribes, he made some of the longest and most toilsome journeys recorded in the annals of the Society of Jesus, and shared with his flock all the horrors of famine, pestilence, and inter-tribal war.

It was soon realized by the missionaries that but meagre results could be obtained until the Indians were induced to lead a sedentary life. Their wandering habit nullified all attempts at permanent instruction to the young; it engendered improvidence and laziness, bred famine and disease; and the constant struggle to kill fur-bearing animals for their pelts rapidly depleted the game, while the fur trade wrought contamination in many forms. Missionary efforts were at first conducive to the interests of the

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

prise waned. In 1685, it was abandoned in favor of St. Francis de Sales, a new mission established at the falls of the Chaudière River, not far from the St. Lawrence. Beyond a monument of later days, to the memory of Fathers Massé and De Nouë, whose names are prominently connected with this work, nothing now remains to mark the site of the old Sillery mission.

From St. Francis, the mission work began to spread into Maine. Of its character and extent there, mention has already been made. St. Francis achieved a certain measure of prosperity, as Indian missions go. It became in time a source of serious trouble to the New England borderers, for many a French and Indian war-party was here fitted out against the latter, during the series of bloody conflicts which marked the three-quarters of a century previous to the fall of New France. Finally, in September, 1759, Maj. Robert Rogers descended upon the village with his famous rangers, and in retaliation pillaged and burned the houses, and killed "at least two hundred Indians." New France soon after fell into the hands of the English, and, the Jesuits being suppressed, we hear little more of St. Francis de Sales.

In 1641, the missionary settlement of Montreal was founded by Maisonneuve. The Jesuits were the first resident clergy, and soon began mission work among the neighboring Indians and those who resorted thither from the valleys of the Lower St. Lawrence and the Ottawa. Soon, however, the Sulpitians, established in Paris by the Abbé Olier, one of the Society of Montreal, took charge of the mission on Montreal Island, which in after years was moved to the Sault au Récollet, and thence to the Lake of the Two Mountains, where there was gathered a poly-

glot village composed of Iroquois, Algonkins, and Nipissings. Upon the opening of the English régime, the Jesuit and Récollet missions were suppressed, but those of the Sulpitians were undisturbed, so that this mission at the lake is the oldest now extant in Canada.

Among the Algonkins of the Ottawa River (or Grande Rivière), no permanent missions were attempted by any of the orders. Long the chief highway to the West, the river was familiar to travelling missionaries, who frequently ministered to the tribesmen along its banks, either at the native villages or during the annual trading councils at the French posts of Montreal, Three Rivers, and Quebec.

IV. The Huron Mission.

At the time of the advent of the French, the Hurons (or Wyandots), allied in origin and language to the Iroquois, numbered about 16,000 souls, and dwelt in several large villages in a narrow district on the high ground between Lake Simcoe and Georgian Bay of Lake Huron. Their dwellings were bark cabins, clustered within stoutly-palisaded walls, and near each fortified town were fields of corn, beans, pumpkins, and tobacco. Agricultural in habit, keen traders, and in the main sedentary, these semi-naked savages made short hunting and fishing expeditions, and laid up stores for the winter. They were better fighters than the Algonkins around them, yet were obliged gradually to withdraw northward and westward from Iroquois persecution, and during the period of the Jesuit missions were almost annihilated by the latter. To the southwest, across a wide stretch of unpopulated forest, were the allies and kindred of

the Hurons, the Tionontates, called also Petuns, or Tobacco Nation, a term having its origin in their custom of cultivating large fields of tobacco, which commodity they used in a wide-spread barter with other tribes. To the southeast of the Petuns, west of Lake Ontario and on both sides of the gorge of Niagara, were the peaceful Atiwandaronks, who, being friends alike of Iroquois, Algonkins, and Hurons, were known as the Neutral Nation. To the eastward of the Neutrals, strongly intrenched in the interlocking basins of the Genesee and the Mohawk, lay the dread confederacy of the Iroquois, who in time were to spread like a pestilence over the lands of all their neighbors.

The intelligence and mobility of the Hurons rendered the early prospects for missionary effort among them more promising than with the rude and nomadic Algonkins. But while at first the missionaries of New France were well received, the innate savagery of these people in time asserted itself. Their medicine-men, as bitterly fanatical as the howling dervishes of the Orient, plotted the destruction of the messengers of the new faith; the introduction of European diseases was attributed to the "black gowns;" the ravages of the Iroquois were thought to be brought on by the presence of the strangers; the rites of the church were looked upon as infernal incantations, and the lurid pictures of the Judgment, which were displayed in the little forest chapels, aroused unspeakable terror among this simple people; finally, an irresistible wave of superstitious frenzy led to the blotting out of the mission, accompanied by some of the most heart-rending scenes in the history of Christian evangelization.

It will be remembered that in 1615 the Récollet friar, Joseph le Caron, made his way into the far-away country of the Hurons, but returned in the following year, having learned much of their language and customs. Five years later, another of his order, William Poulin, took up the weary task, being joined in 1623 by Fathers Le Caron and Nicholas Viel, and the historian of the Récollet missions, Brother Gabriel Sagard. All of them soon left the field, however, save Viel, who alone, amid almost incredible hardships, attained some measure of success; but in 1625, when descending the Ottawa to meet and arrange for co-operation with the Jesuit Brébeuf, at Three Rivers, he was willfully drowned by his Indian guide in the last rapid of Des Prairies River, just back of Montreal. Such is the origin of the name of the dread Sault au Récollet.

In 1626, the Jesuits Brébeuf and Anne de Nouë, having received some linguistic instruction from Récollets who had been in the Huron field, proceeded thither, with a Récollet friar, Joseph de la Roche Daillon, to resume the work which the Récollets had abandoned. Daillon attempted a mission to neighboring Neutrals, but, being roughly handled by them, rejoined his Jesuit friends among the Hurons. Two years later, he returned to Quebec, having been preceded by De Nouë, who found it impossible to master the difficult language of their dusky flock. Brébeuf, now left alone, labored gallantly among these people, and, winning the hearts of many by his easy adoption of their manners, gathered about him a little colony of those favorably inclined to his views. He was recalled to Quebec in 1629, arriving there just in time to fall into the hands of Louis Kirk, and be transported to England.

When Canada was restored to France, by the treaty of St. Germain, the Jesuits were given sole charge of the Indian missions, but it was 1634 before the Huron mission could be reopened. In September, Brébeuf, Antoine Daniel, and Davost returned to Brébeuf's old field, and commenced, in the large town of Ihonatiria, the greatest Jesuit mission in the history of New France. Others soon joined them. Additional missions were opened in neighboring towns, some of the strongest of these being each served by four fathers, who were assisted by laymen donnés, or given men); while in the cultivation of the soil, and the fashioning of implements and utensils both for the fathers and for the Indians, numerous hired laborers, from the French colonies on the St. Lawrence, were employed in and about the missions. Charles Garnier and Isaac Jogues, with their attendants, made a tour of the Petun villages; other Jesuits were sent among the Neutrals; and even the Algonkins as far northwestward as Sault Ste. Marie were visited (1641) by Raymbault and Jogues, and looked and listened with awe at the celebration of the mass. In 1639, there was built, on the River Wye, the fortified mission house of St. Mary's, to serve as a center for the wide-spread work, as a place for ecclesiastical retreat for the fathers, and a refuge when enemies pressed too closely upon them.

The story of the hardships and sufferings of the devoted missionaries, as told us by Rochemonteix, Shea, and Parkman, and with rare modesty recorded in the documents to be contained in this series, is one of the most thrilling in the annals of humanity. Space forbids us here to dwell upon the theme. No men have, in the zealous exercise of their faith,

performed hardier deeds than these Jesuits of the Huron mission; yet, after three years of unremitting toil, they could (1640) count but a hundred converts out of a population of 16,000, and these were for the most part sick infants or aged persons, who had died soon after baptism. The rugged braves scorned the approaches of the fathers, and unmercifully tormented their converts; the medicine-men waged continual warfare on their work; smallpox and the Iroquois were decimating the people.

Jogues was (1642) sent down to the colonies for supplies for the missions, but with his Huron companions was captured by an Iroquois war-party, who led them to the Mohawk towns. There most of the Hurons were killed, and Jogues and his donné, René Goupil, were tortured and mutilated, and made to serve as slaves to their savage jailers. Finally Goupil, a promising young physician, was killed, and Jogues, being rescued by the Dutch allies of the Mohawks, was sent to Europe. Supplies thus failing them, the Huron missionaries were in a sad plight until finally (1644) relieved by an expedition to the lower country undertaken at great hazards by Brébeuf, Garreau, and Noël Chabanel. The same season, Francis Joseph Bressani, attempting to reach the Huron missions, had been captured and tortured by Mohawks; like Jogues, he was rescued through Dutch intercession and sent back to Europe, but both of these zealots were soon back again facing the cruel dangers of their chosen task.

A temporary peace followed, in 1645, and the hope of the Jesuits was rekindled, for they now had five missions in as many Huron towns, and another established for Algonkins who were resident in the

Huron district. But in July, 1648, the Iroquois attacked Teanaustayé, the chief Huron village, and while encouraging the frenzied defense Father Daniel lost his life at the hands of the enemy. He was thus the first Jesuit martyr in the Huron mission, and the second in New France,—for Jogues had been tortured to death in the Iroquois towns, two years before. The spirit of the Hurons was crushed in this bloody foray; large bands, deserting their towns, fled in terror to seek protection of the Petuns, while others made their way to the Manitoulin Islands of Lake Huron, and even as far west as the islands of Green Bay and the matted pine forests of Northern Wisconsin. Here and there a town was left, however, and one of the largest of these, called St. Ignatius by the Jesuits, was stormed by a thousand Iroquois, March 16, 1649. The three survivors fled through the woods to neighboring St. Louis, where were Brébeuf, now grown old in his service of toil, and young Gabriel Lalemant. Bravely did they aid in defending St. Louis, and administering to wounded and dying; but at last were captured, and being taken to the ruined town of St. Ignatius were most cruelly tortured until relieved by death. Early in November, Fathers Garnier and Chabanel met their death in the Petun country, the former at the hands of Iroquois, the latter being killed by a Huron who imagined that the presence of the Jesuits had brought curses upon his tribe.

The missions in the Huron country were now entirely abandoned. A few of the surviving Jesuits followed their flocks to the islands in Lake Huron; but in June, 1650, the enterprise was forsaken, and the missionaries, with a number of their converts,

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

as a prisoner of the Mohawks, the easternmost of the five tribes of the confederacy. Two years later, Bressani, while on his way to the Huron missions, was also captured by the Mohawks, passed through a similar experience of torture, was sold to the Dutch, and transported back to France, and again like Jogues resumed his hazardous task of attempting to tame the American savage. During the first peace (May, 1646), Jogues, now in civilian costume, paid a brief visit to his former tormentors on the Mohawk, this time conveying only expressions of good-will from the governor of New France. His political errand accomplished, he returned to Quebec; but in August was back again, with a young French attendant named Lalande, intent on opening a mission among the Iroquois. Meanwhile, there had been a revulsion of sentiment on their part, and the two Frenchmen had no sooner reached the Mohawk than they were tortured and killed.

During an Iroquois attack upon Quebec, seven years later (1653), Father Joseph Anthony Poncet was taken prisoner by the marauders and carried to the Mohawk, where he suffered in the same manner as his predecessors; but his captors being now desirous of a renewal of peace with the French, spared his life, and sent him back to Quebec with overtures for a renewal of negotiations. Early in July, 1654, Father Simon le Moyne was sent forth upon a tour of inspection, and returned to Quebec in September, with glowing reports of the fervor of his reception by both Mohawks and Onondagas. It was determined to rear a mission among the latter, and thither (1655),—a four weeks' voyage,—proceeded Claude Dablon and Peter Mary Joseph Chaumonot; while,

to appease the jealous Mohawks, Le Moyne at the same time reopened a brief but unprosperous mission among that tribe.

At first, Dablon and Chaumonot had high hopes of their Onondaga enterprise; but mistrust soon arose in the minds of the natives, and Dablon found it necessary to proceed to Quebec and obtain fresh evidences of the friendship of the French. He returned in the early summer of 1656, accompanied by Fathers Francis Le Mercier, superior of the Canadian mission, and René Ménard, two lay brothers, and a party of French colonists under a militia captain, who designed founding a settlement in the land of the Iroquois. By the close of the year, the work was in a promising stage; a number of Christianized Hurons, who had been adopted into the confederacy, formed a nucleus for proselyting, several Iroquois converts had been made, and all five of the tribes had been visited by the missionaries.

Fathers Paul Ragueneau and Joseph Imbert Dupéron, who had been sent out from Quebec in July, 1657, to assist the Onondaga mission, reached it only after many perils en route; for meanwhile, there had been a fresh Iroquois uprising against the Hurons and Ottawas, in which Father Leonard Garreau lost his life near Montreal, and the entire confederacy was soon in an uproar against the white allies of its ancient enemies. The intrepid Le Moyne joined the party in November, and in the following March (1658), on learning that all of the French had been condemned to death, the entire colony stole away in the night, and reached Montreal only after a long and hazardous voyage. The great Iroquois mission, which had promised so happily and cost so

much in blood and treasure, was now thought to be a thing of the past.

There was, however, still another chapter to the story. In the summer of 1660, after two years of bloody forays against New France, a Cayuga sachem, who had been converted at Onondaga, came to Montreal as a peace messenger, asking for another black gown to minister to the native converts and a number of French captives in the Iroquois towns. Once more, Le Moyne cheerfully set out upon what seemed a path to death; but he passed the winter without molestation, and in the spring following was allowed to return to Canada with the French prisoners.

It was five years later (1665), before the government of New France felt itself sufficiently strong to threaten chastisement of the raiding Iroquois, who had long been making life a torment in the colonies on the St. Lawrence. The Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas, and Senecas sued for peace; but the Mohawks were obstinate, and their villages were wasted by fire until they too asked for mercy and the ministrations of the Jesuits. Fathers James Fremin, James Bruyas, and John Pierron were sent out in 1667; later, they were assisted by Julian Garnier, Stephen de Carheil, Peter Milet, and Boniface, so that by the close of 1668 a mission was in progress in each of the five cantonments. A few notable converts were made, among them Catharine Tegakouita, known as the "Iroquois saint;" Catharine Ganneaktena, an Erie captive who afterwards founded a native mission village on the banks of the St. Lawrence; the head-men Assendasé, Kryn, and Soenrese. But a great success was never possible; here as elsewhere, the vices and superstitions of the tribesmen

were deep-rooted, and they had not yet reached a stage of culture where the spiritual doctrines of Christianity appealed strongly, save to a few emotional natures. The converts were subjected to so many annoyances and dangers, that isolation was thought essential, and there was established for them opposite Montreal the palisaded mission of St. Francis Xavier; this settlement, fostered by the French as a buffer against Iroquois attack on the colonists, was subsequently removed to Sault St. Louis, and is known in our day as Caughnawaga. This mission, and that of the Sulpitians on Montreal Mountain — later removed to the neighboring Lake of the Two Mountains, — and at Quinté Bay, were frequently recruited by Iroquois Christians, who were carefully instructed by the missionaries in the arts of agriculture and the rites of the church.

This depletion of the Iroquois population alarmed the sachems of the confederacy. To please them, Governor Dongan of New York, himself a Catholic, introduced to the Five Nations three English Jesuits, who sought in vain to counteract the movement. The French did not abandon the Iroquois mission-field until 1687, when the rising power of the English obliged them to withdraw from the country. We have, however, glimpses of occasional attempts thereafter to revive the work, Bruyas being on the ground in 1701, joined the following year by James de Lamberville, Garnier, and Le Valliant, and later by James d'Hue and Peter de Marieul. The entire party were again driven from the cantonments in 1708, De Marieul being the last of his order to remain on duty.

Thereafter, the Jesuits were chiefly devoted to their mission at Caughnawaga, whither many Iro-

quois retreated before the inroads of Dutch and English settlers who were now crowding upon their lands. When the black gowns were at last expelled from New France, secular priests continued their work among the remnants of those New York Indians who had sought protection by settling among the French colonists on the St. Lawrence.

VI. The Ottawa Mission.

This embraced the tribes beyond Lake Huron,— the Chippewas at Sault Ste. Marie, the Beavers, the Crees, the Ottawas and refugee Hurons on Lake Superior, the Menomonees, Pottawattomies, Sacs, Foxes, Winnebagoes, Miamis, Illinois, and those of the Sioux who lived on or near the banks of the Mississippi. The Ottawas were the first Indians from the upper lakes to trade with the French, hence that vast district became early known as the country of the Ottawas.

The Huron mission was the door to the Ottawa mission. Jogues and Raimbault were with the Chippewas at Sault Ste. Marie in 1641; but it was nineteen years after that (1660), before they were followed by another Jesuit, the veteran Father Ménard, who accompanied an Ottawa fleet up the great river of that name, through Lake Huron and the Sault, and on to Keweenaw Bay, where he said the first mass heard on the shores of the northern sea. After a wretched winter on that inhospitable coast, spent in a shanty of fir boughs, with savage neighbors who reviled his presence, he proceeded inland intent on ministering to some Hurons who had fled from Iroquois persecution to the gloomy pine forest about the upper waters of Black River, in what is now Wisconsin. In August, 1661, he lost his life at a portage,

thus being the first martyr upon the Ottawa mission.

Four years later, Claude Alloüez set out for Lake Superior, and reaching Chequamegon Bay in October (1665), built a little chapel of bark upon the southwest shore of that rock-bound estuary,— the famous mission of La Pointe. His flock was a medley, Hurons and Algonkins here clustering in two villages, where they lived on fish, safe at last from the raging Iroquois, although much pestered by the wild Sioux of the West. For thirty years did Alloüez travel from tribe to tribe, through the forests and over the prairies of the vast wilderness which a century later came to be organized into the Northwest Territory, and established missions at Green Bay, Sault Ste. Marie, on the Miami, and, with Marquette, among the Illinois at Kaskaskia.

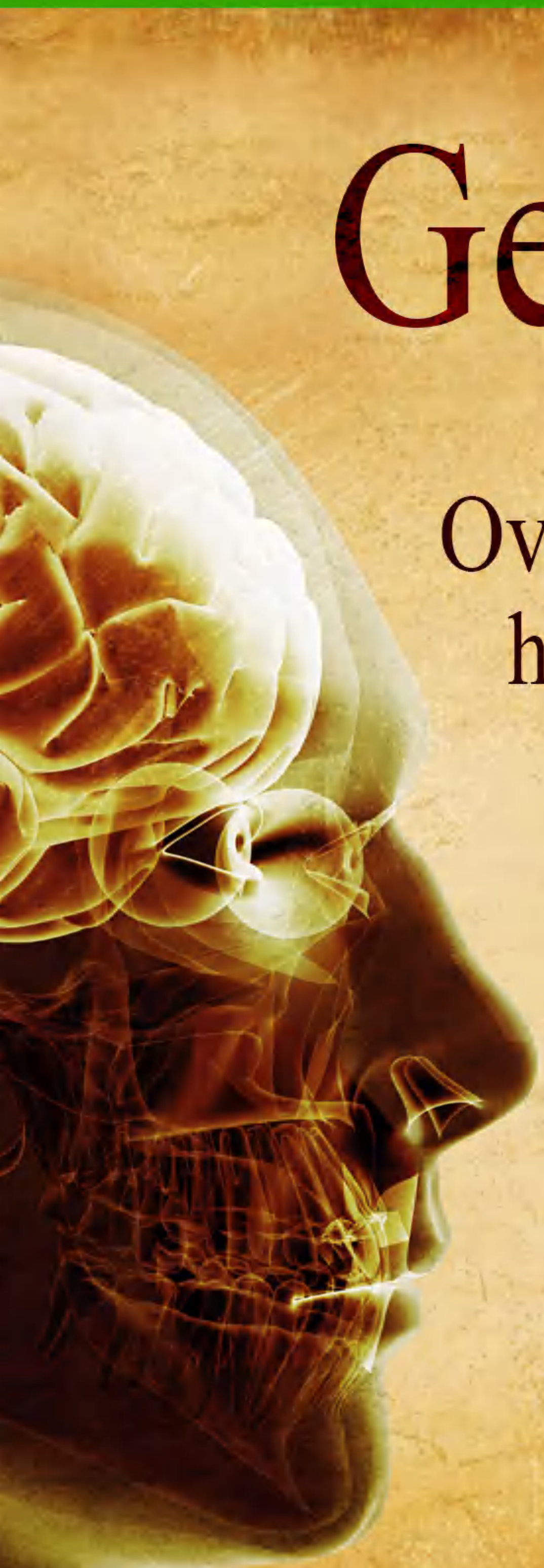
Later, there arrived on the scene Fathers Louis Nicholas, James Marquette, Dablon, Louis André, Druillettes, Albanel, and others. The field of the Northwest seemed at first, as did the Huron mission, highly promising. The missionaries were everywhere greeted by large audiences, and much curiosity was displayed concerning the rites of the church; but, as usual, the nomadic habits of the Indians rendered instruction difficult. The fathers, with great toil and misery, and subject to daily danger and insult, followed their people about upon long hunting and fishing expeditions; and even when the bands had returned to the squalid villages, life there was almost as comfortless as upon the trail. Among the donnés and the Jesuit coadjutor brothers were skillful workers in metal, who repaired the guns and utensils of the natives, and taught them how best to obtain and reduce the ore from lead and copper deposits.

We have evidence that the copper region of Lake Superior was at times resorted to by the lay followers and their Indian attendants, to obtain material for crucifixes and for the medals which the missionaries gave to converts; and in the lead mines centering about where are now Dubuque, Iowa, and Galena, Ill., the missionary attendants and Indians obtained lead for barter with French fur-traders, who, like the soldiers of the Cross, were by this time wandering all over the Northwest.

Marquette had succeeded Alloüez at La Pointe, in 1669; but it was not long before the Hurons and Ottawas of Chequamegon Bay foolishly incurred the fresh hostility of the Sioux, and the following year were driven eastward like autumn leaves before a blast. Marquette established them in a new mission, at Point St. Ignace, opposite Mackinaw; and it was from here that, in 1673, he joined the party of Louis Joliet, en route to the Mississippi River. The St. Ignace mission became the largest and most successful in the Northwest, there being encamped there, during Marquette's time, about 500 Hurons and 1,300 Ottawas. The interesting story of Marquette, a familiar chapter in American history, will be fully developed in the documents of this series; and we shall be able to present for the first time a facsimile of the original MS. Journal of his final and fatal voyage (1674), which is preserved among the many treasures of the Jesuit College of St. Mary's, in Montreal.

After the suspension of the publication of the *Relations*, in 1673, we obtain few glimpses of the Ottawa mission, save in the occasional references of travelers. The several local missions in the district were, in the main, probably more successful than those

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

VII. The Louisiana Mission.

The Jesuit Marquette was in Louisiana in 1673, but established no mission. Nine years later, Membré, of the Récollets, accompanied La Salle into the region, and instructed natives as far down the Mississippi as the mouth; and with La Salle at his death were Anastasius Douay, of the Récollets, and the Sulpitian Cavalier. In 1698, Francis Jolliet de Montigny and Anthony Davion, priests of the Seminary of Quebec, established missions on the Yazoo, among the Natchez, and elsewhere in the neighborhood; to their aid, soon came others of their house,—St. Côme, Gaulin, Fonçault, and Erborie, who labored until about 1710, when, St. Côme and Fonçault being killed by roving Indians, the survivors retired to the North. The Jesuit Du Rue accompanied Iberville into the country in 1699–1700, followed by De Limoges and Dongé, of his order, their work continuing until about 1704.

In 1721, Father Charlevoix reported that but two priests were then in Louisiana, one at Yazoo and another in New Orleans; at the latter post, a chaplain of some sort was established throughout the French régime. Capuchins and Jesuits were both admitted to Louisiana, in 1722, the former to serve as priests to the French of the country, chiefly at New Orleans and Natchez, while the Jesuits were restricted to the Indian missions, although permitted to maintain a house in the outskirts of New Orleans. It was not long before the Illinois mission became attached to Louisiana, and missionaries for that field usually entered upon their work by way of the New Orleans house. Missions were maintained in the villages of

the Arkansas, Yazoo, Choctaws, and Alibamons; but the uprising of the Indians in the Natchez district, in 1727, led to the fall of these several missions, together with that of French colonies above New Orleans. Father Du Poisson was killed by savages at Natchez, where he was temporarily supplying the French settlers in the absence of their Capuchin friar; Souel fell a victim to the Yazoos, at whose hands Doutreleau narrowly escaped destruction. However, the Jesuits did not despair, but soon returned to the Lower Mississippi, where they continued their labors until about 1770, although the order had in 1762 been suppressed in France.

The Louisiana mission of the Jesuits, while producing several martyrs, and rich in striking examples of missionary zeal, has yielded but meagre documentary results; few of the papers in the present series touch upon its work, and indeed detailed knowledge thereof is not easily obtainable. Severed from Canada by a long stretch of wilderness, communication with the St. Lawrence basin was difficult and spasmodic, and in the case of the Jesuits generally unnecessary; for, having their own superior at New Orleans, his allegiance was to the general of the order in France, not to his fellow-superiors in Quebec and Montreal. The several missions of New France played a large part in American history; that of Louisiana, although interesting, is of much less importance.

The Relations.

A few explorers like Champlain, Radisson, and Perrot have left valuable narratives behind them, which are of prime importance in the study of the beginnings of French settlement in America; but it is to

the Jesuits that we owe the great body of our information concerning the frontiers of New France in the seventeenth century. It was their duty annually to transmit to their superior in Quebec, or Montreal, a written journal of their doings; it was also their duty to pay occasional visits to their superior, and to go into retreat at the central house of the Canadian mission. Annually, between 1632 and 1673, the superior made up a narrative, or *Relation*, of the most important events which had occurred in the several missionary districts under his charge, sometimes using the exact words of the missionaries, and sometimes with considerable editorial skill summarizing the individual journals in a general account, based in part upon the oral reports of visiting fathers. This annual *Relation*, which in bibliographies occasionally bears the name of the superior, and at other times of the missionary chiefly contributing to it, was forwarded to the provincial of the order in France, and, after careful scrutiny and re-editing, published by him in a series of duodecimo volumes, known collectively as *The Jesuit Relations*.

The authors of the journals which formed the basis of the *Relations* were for the most part men of trained intellect, acute observers, and practised in the art of keeping records of their experiences. They had left the most highly civilized country of their times, to plunge at once into the heart of the American wilderness, and attempt to win to the Christian faith the fiercest savages known to history. To gain these savages, it was first necessary to know them intimately,—their speech, their habits, their manner of thought, their strong points and their weak. These first students of the North American Indian were

not only amply fitted for their undertaking, but none have since had better opportunity for its prosecution. They were explorers, as well as priests. Bancroft was inexact when he said, in oft-quoted phrase, "Not a cape was turned, not a river entered, but a Jesuit led the way." The actual pioneers of New France were almost always coureurs de bois, in the prosecution of the fur trade; but coureurs de bois, for obvious reasons, seldom kept records, even when capable of doing so, and as a rule we learn of their previous appearance on the scene only through chance allusions in the *Relations*. The Jesuits performed a great service to mankind in publishing their annals, which are, for historian, geographer, and ethnologist, among our first and best authorities.

Many of the *Relations* were written in Indian camps, amid a chaos of distractions. Insects innumerable tormented the journalists, they were immersed in scenes of squalor and degradation, overcome by fatigue and lack of proper sustenance, often suffering from wounds and disease, maltreated in a hundred ways by hosts who, at times, might more properly be called jailers; and not seldom had savage superstition risen to such a height, that to be seen making a memorandum was certain to arouse the ferocious enmity of the band. It is not surprising that the composition of these journals of the Jesuits is sometimes crude; the wonder is, that they could be written at all. Nearly always the style is simple and direct. Never does the narrator descend to self-glorification, or dwell unnecessarily upon the details of his continual martyrdom; he never complains of his lot; but sets forth his experience in phrases the most matter-of-fact. His meaning is seldom obscure.

We gain from his pages a vivid picture of life in the primeval forest, as he lived it; we seem to see him upon his long canoe journeys, squatted amidst his dusky fellows, working his passage at the paddles, and carrying cargoes upon the portage trail; we see him the butt and scorn of the savage camp, sometimes deserted in the heart of the wilderness, and obliged to wait for another flotilla, or to make his way alone as best he can. Arrived at last, at his journey's end, we often find him vainly seeking for shelter in the squalid huts of the natives, with every man's hand against him, but his own heart open to them all. We find him, even when at last domiciled in some far-away village, working against hope to save the unbaptized from eternal damnation; we seem to see the rising storm of opposition, invoked by native medicine-men,— who to his seventeenth-century imagination seem devils indeed,—and at last the bursting climax of superstitious frenzy which sweeps him and his before it. Not only do these devoted missionaries,— never, in any field, has been witnessed greater personal heroism than theirs,— live and breathe before us in the *Relations;* but we have in them our first competent account of the Red Indian, at a time when relatively uncontaminated by contact with Europeans. We seem, in the *Relations*, to know this crafty savage, to measure him intellectually as well as physically, his inmost thoughts as well as open speech. The fathers did not understand him from an ethnological point of view, as well as he is to-day understood; their minds were tinctured with the scientific fallacies of their time. But, with what is known to-day, the photographic reports in the *Relations* help the student to an accurate

picture of the untamed aborigine, and much that mystified the fathers, is now, by aid of their carefulj ournals, easily susceptible of explanation. Few periods of history are so well illuminated as the French régime in North America. This we owe in large measure to the existence of the Jesuit *Relations*.

What are generally known as the *Relations* proper, addressed to the superior and published in Paris, under direction of the provincial, commence with Le Jeune's *Brieve Relation du Voyage de la Nouvelle-France* (1632); and thereafter a duodecimo volume, neatly printed and bound in vellum, was issued annually from the press of Sebastien Cramoisy, in Paris, until 1673, when the series was discontinued, probably through the influence of Frontenac, to whom the Jesuits were distasteful. The *Relations* at once became popular in the court circles of France; their regular appearance was always awaited with the keenest interest, and assisted greatly in creating and fostering the enthusiasm of pious philanthropists, who for many years substantially maintained the missions of New France. In addition to these forty volumes, which to collectors are technically known as "Cramoisys," many similar publications found their way into the hands of the public, the greater part of them bearing date after the suppression of the Cramoisy series. Some were printed in Paris and Lyons by independent publishers; others appeared in Latin and Italian texts, at Rome and other cities in Italy; while in such journals as *Mercure François* and *Annuæ Litteræ Societatis Jesu*, occasionally were published letters from the missionaries, of the same nature as the *Relations*, but briefer and more intimate in tone.

It does not appear, however, that popular interest

in these publications materially affected the secular literature of the period; they were largely used in Jesuit histories of New France, but by others were practically ignored. General literary interest in the *Relations* was only created about a half century ago, when Dr. E. B. O'Callaghan, editor of the *Documentary History of New York*, called attention to their great value as storehouses of contemporary information. Dr. John G. Shea, author of *History of the Catholic Missions among the Indian Tribes of the United States*, and Father Felix Martin, S. J., of Montreal, soon came forward, with fresh studies of the *Relations*. Collectors at once commenced searching for Cramoisys, which were found to be exceedingly scarce,— most of the originals having been literally worn out in the hands of their devout seventeenth-century readers; finally, the greatest collector of them all, James Lenox, of New York, outstripped his competitors and laid the foundation, in the Lenox Library, of what is to-day probably the only complete collection in America. In 1858, the Canadian government reprinted the Cramoisys, with a few additions, in three stout octavo volumes, carefully edited by Abbés Làverdière, Plante, and Ferland. These, too, are now rare, copies seldom being offered for sale.

The Quebec reprint was followed by two admirable series brought out by Shea and O'Callaghan respectively. Shea's *Cramoisy Series* (1857–1866), numbers twenty-five little volumes, the edition of each of which was limited to a hundred copies, now difficult to obtain; it contains for the most part entirely new matter, chiefly *Relations* prepared for publication by the superiors, after 1672, and miscellaneously printed; among the volumes, however, are a few

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

for their French is not the French of the modern schools; hence these interesting papers have been doubly inaccessible to the majority of our historical students. The present edition, while faithfully reproducing the old French text, even in most of its errors, offers to the public, for the first time, an English rendering side by side with the original.

In breadth of scope, also, this edition will, through the generous enterprise of the publishers, readily be first in the field. Not only will it embrace all of the original Cramoisy series, the Shea and O'Callaghan series, those collected by Fathers Martin and Carayon, the *Journal des Jésuites*, and such of the *Lettres Édifiantes* as touch upon the North American missions, but many other valuable documents which have not previously been reprinted; it will contain, also, considerable hitherto-unpublished material from the manuscripts in the archives of St. Mary's College, Montreal, and other depositories. These several documents will be illustrated by faithful reproductions of all the maps and other engravings appearing in the old editions, besides much new material obtained especially for this edition, a prominent feature of which will be authentic portraits of many of the early fathers, and photographic facsimiles of pages from their manuscript letters.

In the Preface to each volume will be given such Bibliographical Data concerning its contents, as seem necessary to the scholar. The appended Notes consist of historical, biographical, archæological, and miscellaneous comment, which it is hoped may tend to the elucidation of the text. An exhaustive General Index to the English text will appear in the final volume of the series.

PREFACE TO VOL. I

There is a dramatic unity in the Jesuit Relations and Allied Documents, as they will be presented in this series. Commencing with a report of the first conversion of savages in New France, in 1610, by a secular priest, and soon drifting into the records of Jesuit missionary effort, they touch upon practically every important enterprise of the Jesuits, in Canada and Louisiana, from the coming of Fathers Biard and Massé, in 1611, to the death, in the closing decade of the eighteenth century, of Father Well, "the last Jesuit of Montreal."

I. The series fitly opens with Lescarbot's *La Conversion des Savvages*. Marc Lescarbot, a Paris lawyer, a Huguenot poet as well as historian, and in many respects a picturesque character in the early scenes of our drama, adroitly seeks in this document to convince the Catholic Queen of France that his Huguenot patrons, De Monts and Poutrincourt, are so wisely ordering affairs in their New World domain that not only will the glory of France be enhanced, but the natives be won to Christ through the medium of the Church; for it was part of the agreement entered into with the Crown, by these adventurers, that while their colonists should be permitted to have Huguenot ministers, the aborigines must be converted only by Catholic priests. To this end, Lescar-

bot describes with unction the sudden conversion by a secular priest, Messire Jessé Fléché, of old Chief Membertou and twenty other Micmacs, and their formal baptism on the beach at Port Royal. The object is, of course, to ward off the threatened invasion of New France by the Jesuits, by showing how thoroughly the work of proselyting is being carried forward without their aid.

II. By the same ship which, in the hands of Poutrincourt's son, Biencourt, carries to France this ingenious document, one Bertrand, a Huguenot layman, sends a message to his friend, the Sieur de la Tronchaie. In his *Lettre Missive*, M. Bertrand describes the conversion of Membertou and his fellow savages, and speaks with enthusiasm of the new country: as well he may, for in Volume II. we shall find Lescarbot testifying that in Paris the worthy Bertrand was "daily tormented by the gout," while at Port Royal he was "entirely free" from it.

III. Lescarbot's fervid description of Father Fléché's conversions did not succeed in keeping the Jesuits from New France. The present document is a letter written at Dieppe, by Father Pierre Biard, of the Society of Jesus, to his general at Rome, telling of the adventures which had befallen Father Ennemond Massé and himself, since they, the pioneers of their order in the New World, had been ordered from France to Port Royal. Certain Huguenot merchants of Dieppe conspired to prevent the passage of the Jesuits to America; but finally the queen and other court ladies, favoring the missionaries, purchased control of the Huguenots' ship and cargo, and the exultant fathers are now on the eve of sailing.

IV. In this letter, written by Biard to his provincial, a few weeks after the arrival at Port Royal, the missionary gives the details of his voyage, describes the spiritual and material condition of Poutrincourt's colony, and outlines plans for work among the Indians—only Huguenot ministers being, as yet, allowed under the charter to serve the spiritual needs of the colonists themselves.

V. In this letter, Biard notifies his general of the safe arrival of Massé and himself.

VI. A like duty is here performed by Massé.

VII. Father Jouvency, one of the eighteenth-century historians of the Society of Jesus, herein gives an historical account of the Canadian missions of his order, in 1611–13; and, by way of comparison, tells of the condition of the same missions in 1703, ending with a list of the Jesuit missions in North America in the year 1710, the date of original publication.

VIII. Herein, Jouvency gives a detailed account of the Indian tribes of Canada,—their customs, characteristics, superstitions, etc. Although not in strict chronological order, these chapters are given here as being from the same work as the foregoing.

In the preparation of several of the Notes to Volume I., the Editor has had some assistance from Mrs. Jane Marsh Parker, of Rochester, N. Y.

R. G. T.

MADISON, WIS., August, 1896.

I

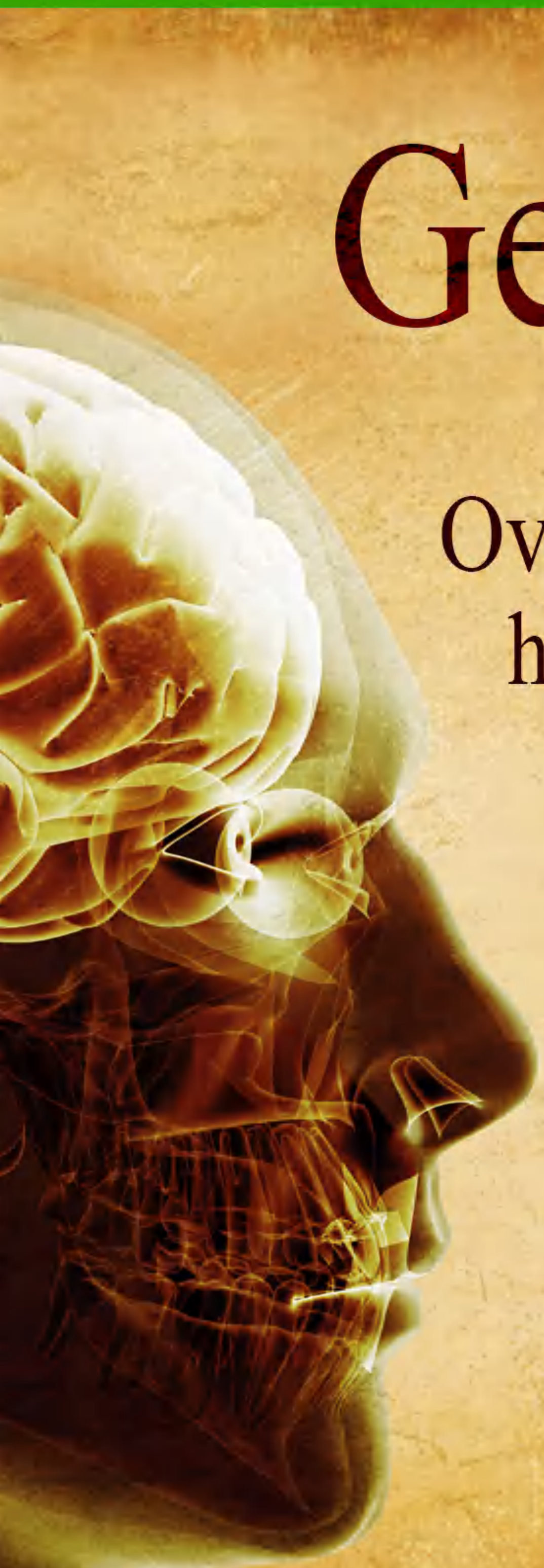
LESCARBOT'S LA CONVERSION DES SAVVAGES

PARIS: JEAN MILLOT, 1610

SOURCE: Title-page and text, reprinted from original in Lenox Library, New York; the Register of Baptisms from original in the John Carter Brown Library, Providence, R. I.

PECULIARITIES IN ORIGINAL PAGINATION: P. 7, misnumbered 1; p. 16, misnumbered 6; pp. 23, 24, are repeated, except the last sentence on p. 24; p. 49 numbered "⅋6."

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

LA CONVERSION DES SAVVAGES QVI ONT ESTE' BAPTIZE'S EN LA NOVVELLE France, cette annee 1610.

AVEC VN BREF RECIT, du voyage du Sieur DE POVTRINCOVRT.

A PARIS,

Chez IEAN MILLOT, tenant sa boutique sur les degrez de la grand' Salle du Palais.

Avec Priuilege du Roy.

THE CONVERSION OF THE SAVAGES WHO WERE BAPTIZED IN NEW FRANCE during this year, 1610.

WITH A BRIEF NARRATIVE of the voyage of Sieur DE POUTRINCOURT.

PARIS,

JEAN MILLOT, keeping shop upon the steps of the great Hall of the Palace.

By Royal License.

[iii] A la Royne.

MADAME,

Dieu m'ayant fait naitre amateur de ma nation & zelateur de ſa gloire, ie ne puis moins que de luy faire part de ce qui la touche, & qui ſans doute l'époinçonnera quand elle entendra que le nom de Ieſus-Chriſt eſt annoncé és terres d'outre mer qui portent le nom de France. Mais particulierement cela regarde vôtre Majeſté, laquelle ſur ces nouvelles a rendu vn temoignage du grand contentement [iv] *qu'elle en avoit. La Chrétienté doit ceci au courage & à la pieté du Sieur de Poutrincourt, qui ne peut viure oiſif parmi la trâquillité en laquelle nous vivons par le benefice du feu Roy vôtre Epoux. Mais (MADAME) ſi vous deſirez bien-tot voir cet œuvre avancé, il faut que vous y mettiez la main. Donnez luy des ailes pour voler ſur les eaux, & penetrer ſi avant dans les terres de delà, que juſques a l'extremité où l'Occident ſe joint à l'Orient, tout lieu retentiſſe du nom de la France. Ie ſçay qu'il ne manque de volonté & fidelité au ſervice du Roy & de vôtre Majeſté, pour faire (apres ce qui eſt de Dieu) que vous ſoyés obeis par tout le monde. Et pour mon regard en tout ce que i'ay iamais travaillé, ie me ſuis efforcé de bien mériter du Roy & du public, auſquels i'ay dedié mes labeurs.* [v] *S'il m'en arrive quelque fruit, ie le dedieray volontiers, & tout ce que Dieu m'a donné d'induſtrie, à l'accroiſſement de cette entrepriſe, & à ce qui regardera le bien de vôtre ſervice. Cependant ayez (MADAME) agreable ce petit diſcours evangelique (c'eſt à dire portant bonnes nouvelles) que publie à la France ſouz vôtre bon plaiſir, MADAME, de vôtre Majeſté le tres-humble, tres-obeïſſant, & tres-fidele ſerviteur & ſujet,*

MARC LESCARBOT.

[iii] To the Queen.[1]

MADAME,

God having created me a lover of my country and zealous for its glory, I cannot do less than impart to it whatever affects its interests; and so doubtless it will be greatly encouraged by the tidings that the name of Jesus Christ has been proclaimed in the lands beyond the sea, which bear the name of France. But this news is of especial interest to your Majesty, who, upon hearing it, gave evidence of your great satisfaction [iv] *therein.*

The Christian World owes this event to the courage and piety of Sieur de Poutrincourt,[2] who cannot lead a life of idleness amid the peaceful prosperity in which we live through the favor of the deceased King, your Husband. But (MADAME), if you wish to see immediate advancement in this work, you must lend a helping hand. Give it wings to fly over the seas, and to penetrate so far into the lands beyond that, even to the uttermost parts where the West unites with the East, every place may resound with the name of France. I know that there is no lack of good-will and loyalty in the service of the King and of your Majesty, to the end that (after what is due to God) you may be obeyed by all mankind. And as for me, in all that I have ever done, I have endeavored to merit the esteem of the King and of the public, to whom I have dedicated my labors. [v] *If I gather any fruit therefrom, I shall willingly consecrate it, and all the energy God has given me, to the enlargement of this enterprise and to whatever may concern the welfare of your service. Meanwhile, be pleased (MADAME) to accept this little gospel narrative (gospel, because bringing good tidings), which is published in France under your good pleasure, MADAME, by your Majesty's very humble, very obedient and very faithful servant and subject,*

MARC LESCARBOT.[3]

[vi] Extraict du Priuilege du Roy.

PAR grace & priuilege du Roy, il eſt permis à Iean Millot Marchant Libraire en la ville de Paris, d'imprimer, ou faire imprimer, vendre & diſtribuer par tout noſtre Royaume tant de fois qu'il luy plaira, en telle forme ou caractere que bon luy ſemblera, vn liure intitulé LA CONVERSION DES SAVVAGES compoſé par MARC LESCARBOT Advocat en la Cour de Parlement. Et ce juſques au temps & terme de ſix ans finis & accomplis, à compter du jour que ledit livre ſera achevé d'imprimer. Pendant lequel temps defences ſont faictes à tous Imprimeurs, Libraires, & autres de quelque eſtat, qualité, ou condition qu'ils ſoient, de non imprimer, vendre, contrefaire, ou alterer ledit liure, ou aucune partie d'iceluy, ſur peine de confiſcation des exẽplaires, & de quinze cens livres d'amende appliquable moitié à nous, & moitié aux pauvres de L'hoſtel Dieu de cette ville de Paris, & deſpens dommages, & intereſts dudit expoſant: Nonobſtant toute clameur de Haro, Chartre Normande, Privileges, lettres ou autres appellations & oppoſitions formees à ce contraires faictes ou a faire. Donné à Paris le neufieſme iour de Septembre l'an de grace 1610. Et de noſtre regne le premier.

Par le Roy en ſon Conſeil.

Signé, BRIGARD.

[vi] Extract from the Royal License.

BY the grace and prerogative of the King, permission is granted to Jean Millot, Bookseller in the city of Paris, to print or to have printed, to sell and distribute throughout all our Kingdom, as often as he may desire, in such form or character as he may see fit, a book, entitled: THE CONVERSION OF THE SAVAGES, composed by MARC LESCARBOT, Counsellor in the Court of Parliament. And this to remain valid until the expiration of six complete years, counting from the day on which the printing of said book shall be finished. During said period of time all Printers, Booksellers, and other persons of whatsoever rank, quality, or condition are prohibited from publishing, selling, imitating, or changing said book or any part thereof, under penalty of confiscation of the copies, and of fifteen hundred livres fine, one-half of which is to be paid to us, and one-half to the poor of the town hospital in this city of Paris, together with the costs, damages, and interests of the aforesaid petitioner: notwithstanding all cries of Haro, Norman Charter,[4] Licenses, letters, or other appeals and counter-claims, opposed to this now or in future. Given at Paris on the ninth day of September, in the year of grace, 1610, and in the first of our reign.

By the King in Council.

Signed, BRIGARD.

[7] La Converſion des Sauvages qui ont eſté baptiſez en la Nouuelle-France, cette annee 1610.

Matth. 24. verſ. 14.

LA parole immuable de nôtre Sauveur Ieſus-Chriſt nous temoigne par l'organe de ſainct Matthieu que *l'Euangile du royaume des cieux ſera annoncé par tout le monde, pour eſtre en temoignage à toutes nations, avant que la conſommation vienne.* Nous ſcavons par les hiſtoires que la voix des Apôtres a eclaté par tout le monde de deça dés il y a pluſieurs ſiecles paſſez, quoy qu'aujourd'hui les royaumes Chrétiens en ſoient la moindre partie. Mais quant au nouveau monde decouvert depuis environ fix-vingts ans, nous n'auons aucun veſtige que la parole de Dieu y ait onques [8] eſté annoncée avant ces derniers temps, ſi ce n'eſt que nous voulions adjouter quelque foy à ce que Iehan de Leri rapporte, que comme il racontoit vn jour aux Breſiliens les grandes merveilles de Dieu en la creation du monde, & myſteres de nôtre redemption, vn vieillart lui dit qu'il auoit oui dire à ſon grand pere qu'autrefois vn homme barbu (or les Breſiliens ne le font point) eſtoit venu vers eux, & leur avoit dit choſes ſemblables: mais qu'on ne le voulut point écouter, & depuis ſ'eſtoiẽt entre-tuez & mangez les vns les autres. Quant aux autres nations de dela quelques vns ont bien quelque ſourde nouvelle du deluge, & de l'immortalité des ames, enſemble dela beatitude des biẽvivans apres cette vie, mais ils peuvent avoir retenu cette obſcure doctrine de main en main par tradition depuis le catacliſme vniverſel qui avint

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

au temps de Noé. Reſte donc à deplorer la miſerable condition de ces peuples qui occupent vne terre ſi grande, que le monde de deça ne vient en comparaiſon avec elle, ſi nous comprenons la terre qui eſt outre le detroit de Magellan dite, [9] *Terra del fugo*, tant en ſon etenduë vers la Chine, & le Iapan, que vers la Nouvelle Guinée: comme auſſi celle qui eſt outre la grande riviere de Canada, qui s'eſtend vers l'Orient & eſt baignée de la grande mer Occidentale. Toutes leſquelles contrees ſont en vne miſerable ignorance, & n'y a point d'apparence qu'elles aient onques eu le vẽt de l'Evangile, ſinon qu'en ce dernier ſiecle l'Heſpagnol parmi la cruauté & l'avarice y a apporté quelque lumiere de la religion Chrétienne. Mais cela eſt ſi peu de chofe, qu'on n'en peut pas faire ſi grand eſtat qu'il pourroit ſembler, d'autant que par la confeſſion méme de ceux qui en ont écrit les hiſtoires ils ont preque tué tous les naturels du païs, & en fait nombre vn certain hiſtorien, de plus de vingt millions, dés il y a ſoixante dix ans. L'Anglois depuis vingt-cinq ans a pris pié en vne terre qui git entre la Floride, & le païs des Armouchiquois, laquelle terre a eſté appellée Virginie en l'honneur de la defuncte Royne d'Angleterre. Mais cette nation fait ſes affaires ſi ſecretement, que peu de gens en ſçauent de [10] nouvelles certaines. Peu apres que i'eu publié mon Hiſtoire de la Nouvelle France on fit vn embarquemẽt de huit cens hommes pour y envoyer. Il n'eſt point mention qu'ils ſe ſoient lavé les mains au ſang de ces peuples. En quoy ils ne font ni à loüer, ni à blamer: car il n'y a aucune loy, ni aucun pretexte, qui permette de tuer qui que ce ſoit, & méme ceux des biens deſquelz nous-nous em-

pened in the time of Noah. It remains now to deplore the wretched condition of these people who occupy a country so large that the old world bears no comparison with it, if we include the land which lies beyond the straits of Magellan, called [9] *Terra del fugo*, extending as far toward China and Japan as toward New Guinea; and also the country beyond the great river of Canada,[6] which stretches out to the East and is washed by the great Western ocean. Dense ignorance prevails in all these countries, where there is no evidence that they have ever felt the breath of the Gospel, except in this last century when the Spaniard carried thither some light of the Christian religion, together with his cruelty and avarice.[7] But this was so little that it should not receive much consideration, since by the very confession of those who have written their histories, they have killed almost all the natives of the country, who, only seventy years ago, according to a certain historian,[8] numbered more than twenty millions. For more than twenty-five years, the English have retained a foothold in a country called, in honor of the deceased Queen of England, Virginia, which lies between Florida and the land of the Armouchiquois.[9] But that country carries on its affairs with so much secrecy, that very few persons know [10] anything definite about it. Soon after I published my History of New France,[10] there was an embarkation of eight hundred men to be sent there. It is not reported that they bathed their hands in the blood of those people, for which they are neither to be praised nor blamed: for there is no law nor pretext which permits us to kill anyone, whosoever he may be, and especially the persons whose property we have seized. But they are

parons. Mais ils font à prifer s'ils montrent à ces pauvres ignorans le chemin de falut par la vraye & non fardeé doctrine Evangelique. Quant à noz François ie me fuis affez plaint en madite Hiftoire de la poltronnerie du temps d'aujourd'huy, & du peu de zele que nous avons foit à redreffer ces pauvres errans, foit à faire que le nom de Dieu foit coneu exalté & glorifié en ces terres d'outre mer, où jamais il ne le fut. Et toutefois nous voulons que cela porte le nom de France, nom tant auguſte & venerable, que nous ne pouvons fans honte nous glorifier d'vne France qui n'eſt point Chrétienne. Ie fçay qu'il ne manque pas de gens de bõne volonté pour y aller. Mais pourquoy [11] l'Eglife, qui poffede tant de biens; mais pourquoy les Grands, qui font tant de depenfes fuperflues, ne financent-ilz quelque chofe pour l'execution d'vn fi fainct œuvre? Deux Gentils-hommes pleins de courage en ces derniers tẽps fe font trouvez zelés à ceci, les Sieurs de Monts, & de Poutrincourt, leſquels à leurs dépens fe font enervés, & ont fait plus que leurs forces ne pouvoient porter. L'vn & l'autre ont continué juſques à preſent leurs voyages. Mais l'vn a eſté deceu par deux fois, & eſt tombé en grand intereſt pour s'eſtre rendu trop credule aux paroles de quelques vns. Or d'autant que les dernieres nouvelles que nous avons de nôtre Nouvelle-France viennent de la part du Sieur de Poutrincourt, nous dirons ici ce qui eſt de ſon fait: & avons iuſte ſujet d'exalter ſon courage, entant que ne pouvant viure parmi la tourbe des hommes oiſifs, dont nous n'abondons que trop; & voyant nôtre France comme languir au repos d'vn calme ennuieux aux hõmes de travail: apres avoir en mille occaſions fait preuve de

to be commended if they show to these poor ignorant people the way of salvation by the true and unvarnished doctrine of the Gospel. As to our French people, I have complained enough in my History of the cowardice of these later times, and of our lack of zeal either in reclaiming these poor erring ones, or in making known, exalted, and glorified, the name of God in the lands beyond the seas, where it never has been proclaimed. And yet we wish that country to bear the name of France, a name so august and venerable that we cannot, without a feeling of shame, glory in an un-Christianized France. I know that there are any number of people who are willing to go there. But why is it that [11] the Church, which has so much wealth; why is it that the Nobility, who expend so much needlessly, do not establish some fund for the execution of so holy a work? Two courageous Gentlemen, Sieurs de Monts and de Poutrincourt, have in these later times shown such great zeal in this work, that they have weakened their resources by their outlays, and have done more than their strength justified them in doing. Both have continued their voyages up to the present time. But one of them has been frustrated twice, and has had heavy losses through too great confidence in the words of certain persons. Now, inasmuch as the latest news of our New France comes from Sieur de Poutrincourt, we shall speak here of what he has accomplished, and we have good reason to praise his courage; for (not being able to live among the crowd of idle men, of whom we have only too many, and seeing our France seeming to languish in a monotonous calm that was wearisome to men of action), after having given a thousand proofs of his valor during the last twenty-

ſa valeur depuis vingt quatre ans ença; il a voulu coroner [12] ſes labeurs vrayement Herculeens par la cauſe de Dieu, pour laquelle il employe ſes moyens & ſes forces, & va hazardant ſa vie, pour accroitre le nombre des citoyens des cieux, & amener à la bergerie de Ieſus-Chriſt nôtre ſouverain Paſteur, les brebis egarées, leſquelles il ſeroit bien-ſeant aux Prelats de l'Egliſe d'aller recuillir (du moins contribuer à cet effect) puis qu'ils en ont le moyen. Mais avec combien de travaux s'eſt-il employé juſques ici à cela? Voici la troiſieme fois qu'il paſſe le grand Ocean pour parvenir à ce but. La premiere année ſe paſſa avec le ſieur de Monts à chercher vne demeure propre & vn port aſſeuré pour la retraite des vaiſſeaux & des hommes. Ce qui ne ſucceda pas bien. La ſeconde année fut employée à la meſme chofe, & lors il eſtoit en France. En la troiſieme nous fimes epreuve de la terre, laquelle nous rendit abondamment le fruict de nôtre culture: Cette annee icy voyant par vne mauvaiſe experience que les hommes ſont trompeurs, il ne s'eſt plus voulu attendre à autre qu'à luy-méme, & [s']eſt mis en mer le 26. Fevrier, ayant eu [13] temps fort contraire en ſa navigation, laquelle a eſté la plus longue dont i'aye jamais ouï parler. Certes la nôtre nous fut fort ennuieuſe il y a trois ans, ayans eſté vagabons l'eſpace de deux mois & demi fur la mer avant qu'arriver au Port Royal. Mais en cette-ci ils ont eſté trois mois entiers. De forte qu'vn indiſcret ſe ſeroit mutiné juſques à faire de mauvaiſes conſpirations: toutesfois la benignité dudit Sieur de Poutrincourt & le reſpect du lieu où il demeuroit à Paris, lui ont ſerui de bouclier pour luy garentir la vie. La premiere côte où

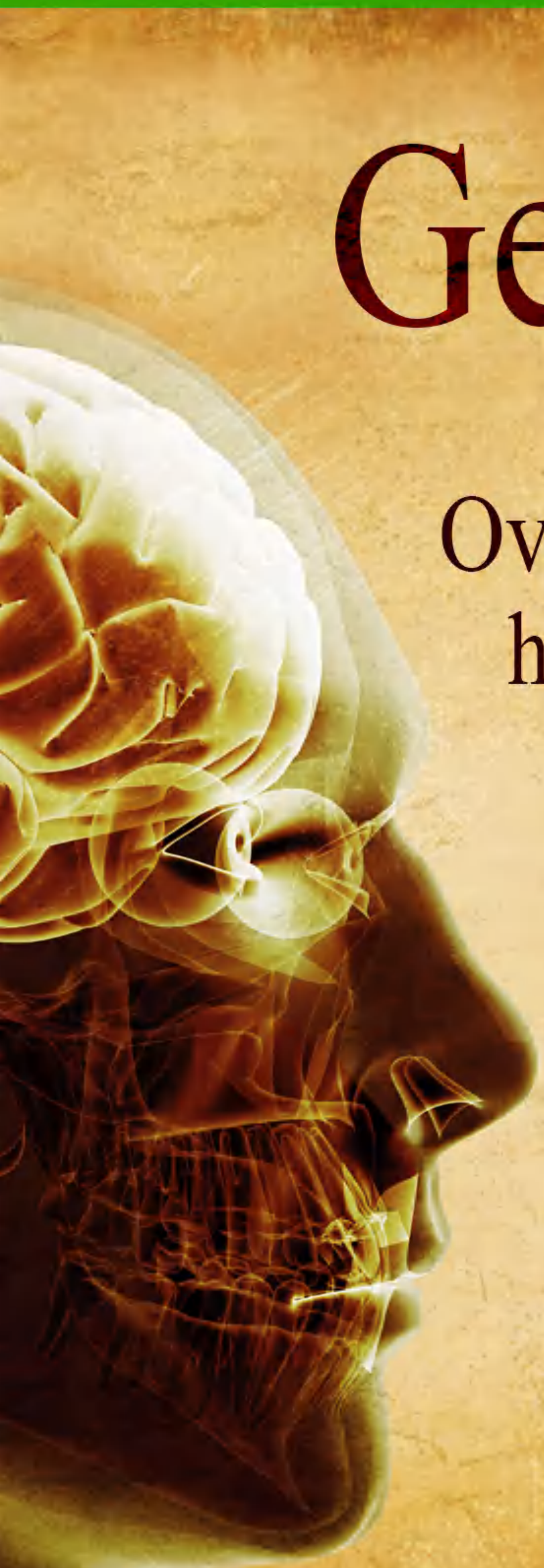
four years, he sought to crown [12] his truly Herculean labors in the cause of God, for which he employs his means and strength, and endangers his life, by increasing the number of celestial citizens, and leading to the fold of Jesus Christ, our sovereign Shepherd, the wandering sheep, whom it would be becoming to the Prelates of the Church to go out and gather in (at least to contribute to this end) since they have the means of doing so. But with what difficulty has he labored in this cause up to the present time? Thrice has he crossed the great Ocean to carry on his enterprises. The first year was passed with sieur de Monts in seeking a suitable dwelling and a safe port for the withdrawal of the ships and their crews. In this, they did not meet with much success. The second year passed in the same way, and then he returned to France. During the third year, we experimented with the soil, which yielded abundantly to our cultivation. This present year, discovering through an unfortunate experience that men are not always to be trusted, he made up his mind to depend upon no one but himself, and put to sea on the twenty-sixth of February; the [13] weather being very unfavorable, he made the longest voyage of which I have ever heard; certainly our own, three years ago, was tedious enough, when we drifted about upon the sea for the space of two months and a half before reaching Port Royal. But this one lasted three whole months, so that one reckless man was about to mutiny, going so far as to form wicked conspiracies; but Sieur de Poutrincourt's kindness, and respect for the place where he lived in Paris, served as a shield to protect his life. The first coast which Sieur de Poutrincourt discovered was port Mouton; there,

Terrir, c'eſt à dire decouvrir la terre.

territ iceluy Sieur de Poutrincourt fut au port au Mouton. De là parmi les brouïllas qui font fort frequens le long de l'Eté en cette mer, il ſe trouva en quelques perils, principalement vers le Cap de Sable, où ſon vaiſſeau penſa toucher ſur les briſans. Depuis voulant gaigner le Port Royal, il fut porté par la violence des vents quarante lieuës par-dela, c'eſt à ſçavoir à la riviere de Norombega tant celebrée & fabuleuſement décrite par les Geographes & Hiſtoriens, ainſi que i'ay monſtré en madite Hiſtoire, là où ſe pourra voir cette navigation par la Table geographique [14] que i'y ay miſe. De-là il vint à la riviere ſainct Iehan qui eſt vis à vis du Port Royal pardela la Baye Françoiſe, où il trouva vn navire de S. Malo, qui troquoit avec les Sauvages du païs. Et là il eut plainte d'vn Capitaine Sauvage qu'vn dudit navire lui auoit ravi ſa femme, & en abuſoit: dont ledit Sieur fit informer, & print celui là priſonnier, & le navire auſſi. Mais il laiſſa aller ledit navire & les matelots ſe contentant de garder le malfaiteur: lequel neantmoins s'evada dans vne chaloupe & ſe retira avec les Sauvages, les detournant de l'amitié des François, comme nous dirons ci-apres. En fin arriués audit Port Royal il ne ſe peut dire avec combien de ioye ces pauvres peuples receurent ledit Sieur & ſa compagnie. Et de verité le ſujet de cette ioye eſtoit d'autant plus grand qu'ils n'avoient plus d'eſperance de voir les François habiter aupres d'eux, deſquels ils auoient reſſenti les courtoiſies lors que nous y eſtions, dont ſe voyans priués, auſſi pleuroient ils à chaudes larmes quand nous partimes de là il y a trois ans. En ce Port Royal eſt la demeure [15] dudict ſieur de Poutrincourt, le plus beau ſejour que

Hiſt. de la Nouvelle-France liv. 2. chap. 37. p. 527.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Dieu ait formé fur la terre, remparé d'un rang de 12 ou 15. lieuës de montagnes du côté du Nort, fur leſquelles bat le Soleil tout le iour: & de cotaux au côte du Su, ou Midi: lequel au reſte peut contenir vingt milles vaiſſeaux en aſſeurance, ayant vingt braſſes de profond à ſon entrée, vne lieuë & demie de large, & quatre de long juſques à vne ile qui a vne lieuë Françoiſe de circuit: dans lequel i'ay veu quelquefois à l'aiſe noüer vne moyenne Baleine, qui venoit auec le flot à huict heures au matin par chacun jour. Au reſte dans ce port ſe peche en la ſaiſon grande quantité de harens, d'eplans, (ou eperlans) ſardines, bars, moruës, loups-marins, & autre poiſſons: & quant aux coquillages, on y recueille force houmars, crappes, palourdes, coques, moules, eſcargots, & chatagines de mer. Mais qui voudra aller au deſſus du flot de la mer il pechera en la riviere force eturgeons & ſaumons, à la deffaicte deſquels il y a vn ſingulier plaiſir. Or pour reprendre nôſtre fil, le Sieur de Poutrincourt arrivé [6 i.e. 16] là a trouvé ſes batimens tout entiers ſans que les Sauvages (ainſi a-on appellé ces peuples là iuſques à maintenant) y euſſent touché en aucune façon, ny méme aux meubles qu'on y avoit laiſſé. Et ſoucieux de leurs vieux amis ils demandoient comme vn chacun d'eux ſe portoit, les nommant particulierement par leurs noms communs, & demandans pourquoy tels & tels n'y eſtoient retournez. Ceci demontre vne grãde debõnaireté en ce peuple, lequel auſſi ayant en nous reconu toute humanité, ne nous fuit point ; comme il fait l'Heſpagnol en tout ce grand monde nouveau. Et conſequemment par vne douceur & courtoiſie, qui leur eſt auſſi familiere qu'à nous, il eſt aiſé de les faire plier à tout ce que l'on

range of 12 or 15 leagues of mountains, upon which the Sun beats all day, and by hills on the Southern or Meridian shore, which forms a port that can securely harbor twenty thousand ships, being twenty fathoms deep at its entrance, a league and a half in width, and four leagues long, extending to an island which is a French league in circumference: here I have sometimes seen swimming at ease a medium-sized Whale, which came in with the tide at eight o'clock every morning. Furthermore, there can be caught in this port, in their season, great quantities of herring, smelt, sardines, barbels, codfish, seals and other fish; and as to shell-fish, there is an abundance of lobsters, crabs, palourdes,[14] cockles, mussels, snails, and porpoises. But whoever is disposed to go beyond the tides of the sea will find in the river quantities of sturgeon and salmon, and will have plenty of sport in landing them. Now, to return to our story; When Sieur de Poutrincourt arrived [6 i.e. 16] there, he found his buildings entire, the Savages (as these people have been called up to the present) not having touched them in any way, even the furniture remaining as we had left it. Anxious about their old friends, they asked how they were all getting along, calling each individual by his name, and asking why such and such a one had not come back. This shows the great amiability of these people, who, having seen in us only the most humane qualities, never flee from us, as they do from the Spaniard in this whole new world. And consequently by a certain gentleness and courtesy, which are as well known to them as to us, it is easy to make them pliant to all our wishes, and especially so in regard to Religion, of which we left them some good impressions when we

voudra, & particulierement pour ce qui touche le point de la Religion, de laquelle nous leur avions baillé de bonnes impreſſiõs lors que nous eſtions aupres d'eux, & ne deſiroient pas mieux que de ſe ranger fouz la banniere de Ieſus-Chriſt: à quoy ils euſſent eſté receuz dés lors, ſi nous euſſions eu vn pié ferme en la terre. Mais comme nous penſions continuer, [17] avint que le ſieur de Monts ne pouvant plus fournir à la depenſe, & le Roy ne l'aſſiſtant point, il fut contraint de revoquer tous ceux qui eſtoient pardelà, leſquels n'avoient porté les choſes neceſſaires à vne plus longue demeure. Ainſi c'euſt eſté temerité & folie de conferer le baptéme à ceux qu'il euſt fallu par apres abandonner, & leur donner ſujet de retourner à leur vomiſſement. Mais maintenant que c'eſt à bon eſcient, & que ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt fait pardelà ſa demeure actuelle, il eſt loiſible de leur imprimer le charactere Chrétien ſur le front & en l'ame, apres les avoir inſtruit és principaux articles de nôtre Foy. Ce qu'a eu ſoin de faire ledit Sieur, ſachant ce que dit l'Apôtre, que *celuy qui s'approche de Dieu doibt croire que Dieu eſt*: & apres cette croyance, peu à peu on vient aux choſes qui ſont plus eloignées du ſens commun, comme de croire que d'vn rien Dieu ait fait toutes choſes, qu'il ſe ſoit fait homme, qu'il ſoit nay d'vne Vierge, qu'il ait voulu mourir pour l'homme, &c. Et d'autant que les hommes Eccleſiaſtics qui ont eſté portés pardelà ne ſont encore [18] inſtruits en la langue de ces peuples, ledit Sieur a pris la peine de les inſtruire & les faire inſtruire par l'organe de ſon fils ainé jeune Gentilhomme qui entend & parle fort bien ladite langue, & qui sẽble eſtre né pour leur ouvrir le chemin des cieux. Les hommes qui ſont au Port Royal,

Aux Hebr. 11. *verſ.* 6.

were there; and they seemed to wish for nothing better than to enroll themselves under the banner of Jesus Christ, where they would have been received at once if we had had a firm foothold in the country. But just as we were hoping to continue [17] the work, it happened that sieur de Monts, being unable longer to meet the expenses, and not receiving any help from the King, was obliged to recall all those who were over there, who had not taken with them the means necessary to a longer sojourn. So it would have been rash and unwise to administer baptism to people whom it was necessary afterwards to abandon, and give them an opportunity to return to their corruption. But now that the work is being carried on in earnest, and as sieur de Poutrincourt has actually settled there, it is lawful to impress upon their minds and souls the stamp of Christianity, after having instructed them in the principal articles of our Faith. Sieur de Poutrincourt is careful to do this, remembering what the Apostle said, *He that cometh to God, must believe that he is;* and after believing this, one comes gradually to ideas which are farther removed from mere sensual apprehension, such as the belief that out of nothing God created all things, that he made himself man, that he was born of a Virgin, that he consented to die for man, etc. And inasmuch as the Ecclesiastics who have been taken over there are not [18] familiar with the language of these people, the Sieur has taken the trouble to teach them and to have them taught by his eldest son, a young Gentleman who understands and speaks the native language very well, and who seems to have been destined to open up to the Savages the way to heaven. The people who are at Port Royal, and in

Hebrews 11, vers. 6.

& terres adjacentes tirant vers la Terre-neuve, s'appellent Souriquois, & ont leur langue propre. Mais paſſée la Baye Françoiſe, qui a environ 40. lieuës de profond dans les terres, & 10. ou 12. lieuës de large, les hommes de l'autre part s'appellent Etechemins, & plus loin font les Armouchiquois peuple diſtingué de langage de ceux-ci, & lequel eſt heureux en quãtité de belles vignes & gros raiſins, s'il ſçavoit conoitre l'vtilité de ce fruit, lequel (ainſi que nos vieux Gaullois) il penſe eſtre poiſon. Il a auſſi de la chãve excellente que la nature lui donne, laquelle en beauté and bõté paſſe de beaucoup la nôtre: & outre ce le Saſſafras, force chenes, noyers, pruniers, chataigniers, & autres fruits qui ne font venus à nôtre conoiſſance. Quant au Port Royal ie veux confeſſer qu'il n'y a pas [19] tant de fruits: & neantmoins la terre y eſt plantureuſe pour y eſperer tout ce que la France Gaulloiſe nous produit. Tous ces peuples ſe gouvernent par Capitaines qu'ils appellent Sagamos, mot qui eſt pris és Indes Orientales en méme ſignification, ainſi que i'ay leu en l'hiſtoire de Maffeus, & lequel i'eſtime venir du mot Hebrieu *Sagan*, qui ſignifie Grand Prince, ſelon Rabbi David, & quelquefois celui qui tient le ſecond lieu apres le ſouverain Pontife. En la verſion ordinaire de la Bible il eſt pris pour le Magiſtrat: & neantmoins là méme les interpretes Hebrieux le tournẽt Prince. Et de fait nous liſons dans Beroſe que Noé fut appellé Saga tant pour ce qu'il eſtoit grand Prince, que pour ce qu'il avoit enſeigné la Theologie, & les ceremonies du ſervice divin, avec beaucoup de ſecrets des choſes natureles, aux Scytes Armeniens, que les anciens Coſmographes appellerent Sages du nom de Noé. Et paraventure pour cette

Ammian Marcellin.

Eſai. 41. *verſ.* 25 *Ierem.* 51. *verſ.* 23. *Santes Pagnin.* 9.

the adjacent countries extending toward Newfoundland, are called Souriquois[15] and have a language of their own. But beyond French Bay, which extends into the land about forty leagues, and is ten or twelve leagues wide, the people on the other side are called Etechemins; and still farther away are the Armouchiquois, whose language is different from that of the Etechemins, and who are fortunate in having an abundance of vines and large grapes, if they only knew how to make use of this fruit, which they believe (as did our ancient Gauls) to be poisonous. They also have excellent hemp, which grows wild, and in quality and appearance is much superior to ours. Besides this they have Sassafras, and a great abundance of oak, walnut, plum and chestnut trees, and other fruits which are unknown to us. As to Port Royal, I must confess that there is not [19] much fruit there; and yet the land is productive enough to make us hope from it all that Gallic France yields to us. All these tribes are governed by Captains called Sagamores, a word used with the same signification in the East Indies, as I have read in the History by Maffeus,[16] and which I believe comes from the Hebrew word *Sagan*, which, according to Rabbi David, means Great Prince, and sometimes means the one who holds the second place after the sovereign Pontiff. In the usual version of the Bible it is defined "Magistrate," and yet even there the Hebrew interpreters translate it by the word "Prince." And in fact we read in Berosus[17] that Noah was called Saga, as much because he was a great Prince as because he had taught Theology and the ceremonies of divine service, and also many of the secrets of nature, to the Armenian Scythians, whom the ancient Cosmog-

Ammianus Marcellinus.

Isaiah 41, vers. 25, Jerem. 51, vers. 23, Santes Pagnin, 9.

méme conſideration ont eſté appellés nos Tectoſages, qui font les Toloſains. Car ce bon pere reſtaurateur du monde vint en Italie, & envoya [20] repeupler les Gaulles apres le Deluge, donnant ſon nom de Gaullois (car Xenophon dit qu'il fut auſſi appellé de ce nom) à ceux qu'il y envoya, par ce qu'il avoit eſté echappé des eaux. Et n'eſt pas inconvenient que lui-méme n'ait impoſé le nom aux Tectoſages. Revenons à nôtre mot de Sagamos lequel eſt le tiltre d'honneur des Capitaines en ces Terres neuves dont nous parlons. Au Port Royal le Capitaine, ou Sagamos dudit lieu s'appelle en ſon nom Membertou. Il eſt âgé de cent ans pour le moins, & peut naturellement vivre encore plus de cinquante. Il a fous ſoy pluſieurs familles, auſquelles il commande, non point avec tant d'authorité que fait nôtre Roy fur ſes ſujets, mais pour haranguer, donner conſeil, marcher à la guerre, faire raiſon à celui qui reçoit quelque injure, & choſes ſẽblables. Il ne met point d'impoſt fur le peuple. Mais s'il y a de la chaſſe il en a ſa part fans qu'il ſoit tenu d'y aller. Vray eſt qu'on lui fait quelquefois des preſens de peaux de Caſtors, ou autre chofe, quand il eſt employé pour la gueriſon de quelque malade, ou pour interroger [21] ſon dæmon (qu'il appelle *Aoutem*) afin d'auoir nouvelle de quelque chofe future, ou abſente: car chaque village, ou compagnie de Sauvages, ayant vn *Aoutmoin*, c'eſt à dire Devin, qui fait cet office, Membertou eſt celui qui de grande ancienneté à prattiqué cela entre ceux parmi leſquels il a converſé. Si bien qu'il eſt en credit pardeſſus tous les autres Sagamos du païs, aiãt dés ſa jeuneſſe eſté grand Capitaine, & parmi cela exercé l'office de Devin & de Medecin, qui font les

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

trois choſes plus efficaces à obliger les hommes, & à ſe rendre neceſſaire en ceſte vie humaine. Or ce Membertou aujourd'huy par la grace de Dieu eſt Chrétien avec toute ſa famille, aiant eſté baptizé, & vingt autres apres lui, le jour ſainct Iehan dernier 24. Iuin. I'en ay lettres dudit Sieur de Poutrincourt en datte du vnzieme jour de Iuillet enſuivant. Ledit Membertou a eſté nommé du nom de nôtre feu bon Roy Henry IIII. & ſon fils ainé du nom de Monſeigneur le Dauphin aujourd'huy nôtre Roy Lovis XIII. que Dieu benie. Et ainſi conſequemment la femme de Membertou a [22] eſté nommée Marie du nom de la Royne Regente, & à ſa fille a eſté impoſé le nom de la Roine Margverite. Le ſecond fils de Membertou dit Actaudin fut nommé Pavl du nom de nôtre ſainct Pere le Pape de Rome. La fille du ſuſdit Louis eut nom Christine en l'honneur de Madame la ſœur ainee du Roy. Et conſequemment à chacun fut impoſé le nom de quelque illuſtre, ou notable perſonnage de deça. Pluſieurs autres Sauvages eſtoient lors allez cabanner ailleurs (comme c'eſt leur coutume de ſe diſperser par bendes quand l'eſté eſt venu) lors de ces ſolennitez de regeneration Chrétienne, leſquels nous eſtimons eſtre aujourd'huy enrollés en la famille de Dieu par le méme lavemẽt du ſainct bapteme. Mais le diable, qui iamais ne dort, en ceſte occurrence ici a témoigné la jalouſie qu'il avoit du ſalut annoncé à ce peuple, & de voir que le nom de Dieu fuſt glorifié en cette terre: ayant ſuſcité vn mauvais François, non François, mais Turc: non Turc, mais Athée, pour detourner du ſentier de ſalut pluſieurs Sauvages qui eſtoient Chrétiens en leur ame & de [23] volonté dés il y a trois ans: & entre autres vn

also having exercised the offices of Soothsayer and Medicine-man, which are the three things most efficacious to the well-being of man, and necessary to this human life. Now this Membertou to-day, by the grace of God, is a Christian, together with all his family, having been baptized, and twenty others with him, on last saint John's day, the 24th of June. I have letters from Sieur de Poutrincourt about it, dated the eleventh day of July following. He said Membertou was named after our late good King HENRI IV., and his eldest son after Monseigneur the Dauphin, to-day our King LOUIS XIII., whom may God bless. And so, as a natural consequence, the wife of Membertou [22] was named MARIE after the Queen Regent, and her daughter received the name of the Queen, MARGUERITE. The second son of Membertou, called Actaudin, was named PAUL after our holy Father, the Pope of Rome. The daughter of the aforesaid Louis was named CHRISTINE in honor of Madame, the eldest sister of the King. And thus to each one was given the name of some illustrious or notable personage here in France. A number of other Savages were about to camp elsewhere (as it is their custom to scatter in bands when summer comes) at the time of these ceremonies of Christian regeneration, whom we believe to be to-day enrolled in the family of God by the same cleansing water of holy baptism.[20] But the devil, who never sleeps, has shown the jealousy which he felt at the salvation of these people, and at seeing that the name of God was glorified in this land, by inciting a wicked Frenchman, not a Frenchman but a Turk, not a Turk but an Atheist, to divert from the path of righteousness several Savages who had been Christians in their hearts and [23] souls for

Sagamos nommé Chkoudun homme de grand credit, duquel i'ay fait honorable mẽtion en mon Hiſtoire de la Nouvelle-Frãce, par ce que je l'ay veu fur tous autres aymer les François, & qu'il admiroit nos inventions au pris de leur ignorance: mémes que s'eſtant quelquefois trouvé aux remontrances Chrétiennes qui ſe faiſoient par-de là à noz Frãçois par chacun Dimanche, il s'y rendoit attentif, encores qu'il n'y entẽdiſt rien: & davantage avoit pendu devant ſa poitrine le ſigne de la Croix, lequel il faiſoit auſſi porter à ſes domeſtics & avoit à nôtre imitation planté vne grande Croix en la place de ſon village dit *Oigoudi*, fur le port de la riuiere ſainct Iehan, à dix lieuës du port Royal. Or cet homme avec les autres, a eſté détourné d'eſtre Chrétien par l'avarice maudite de ce mauvais François que i'ay touché ci-deſſus, lequel ie ne veux nõmer pour cette heure pour l'amour & reverence que ie porte à ſon pere, mais avec proteſtation de l'eterniſer s'il ne s'amende. Celui-là, di-ie, pour attraper quelques Caſtors de ce Sagamos [24] Chkoudun, l'alla en Iuin dernier ſuborner, apres s'eſtre euadé des mains dudit Sieur de Poutrincourt, disãt que tout ce qu'icelui Poutrincourt leur diſoit de Dieu n'eſtoit rien qui vaille, qu'il ne le falloit point croire, & que c'eſtoit vn abuſeur, & qu'il les feroit mourir pour avoir leurs Caſtors. Ie laiſſe beaucoup de mechans diſcours qu'il peut avoir adjouté à cela. S'il eſtoit de la Religion de ceux qui ſe diſent Reformez ie l'excuſerois aucunement: mais il mõtre bien qu'il n'eſt ni de l'vne, ny de l'autre. Si diray-ie toutefois qu'il a ſujet de remercier Dieu du dãger où il s'eſt veu en nôtre voiage. Ce Sagamos pouvoit eſtant Chrétien en rẽdre bon nombre

three years; and among others a Sagamore named Chkoudun, a man of great influence, of whom I have made honorable mention in my History of New France, because I saw that he, more than all the others, loved the French, and that he admired our civilization more than their ignorance: to such an extent, that being present sometimes at the Christian admonitions, which were given every Sunday to our French people, he listened attentively, although he did not understand a word; and moreover wore the sign of the Cross upon his bosom, which he also had his servants wear; and he had in imitation of us, a great Cross erected in the public place of his village, called *Oigoudi*, at the port of the river saint John, ten leagues from Port Royal. Now this man, with others, was turned away from Christianity, by the cursed avarice of this wicked Frenchman to whom I have referred above, and whom I do not wish to name now on account of the love and reverence I bear his father, but I protest that I will immortalize him if he does not mend his ways. He, I say, in order to defraud this Sagamore [24], Chkoudun, of a few Beavers, went last June to bribe him, after having escaped from the hands of Sieur de Poutrincourt, saying that all this Poutrincourt told them about God was nonsense, that they need not believe it, that he was an impostor, that he would kill them and get their Beavers. I omit a great many wicked stories that he may have added to this. If he were of the religious belief of those who call themselves Reformed, I might somewhat excuse him. But he plainly shows that he is neither of the one nor the other. But I will say, however, that he has reason to thank God for his escape from imminent peril on our

ſemblables à lui, à ſon imitation. Mais ie veux eſperer, ou pluſtot croire pour certain qu'il ne demeurera plus gueres long tẽps en cet erreur, & que ledit Sieur aura trouvé moyen de l'attirer (avec beaucoup d'autres) pres de ſoy, pour luy imprimer derechef les vives perſuaſions dont il luy avoit autrefois touché l'ame en ma preſence. Car l'eſprit de Dieu eſt puiſſant pour faire tõber ſur ce champ vne nouvelle rouſee, qui fera regermer ce que la grele a deſſeché & abbatu. Dieu vueille par ſa grace conduire le tout en forte que la chofe reüſſiſſe à ſa gloire & à l'edification de ce peuple, pour lequel tous Chrétiens doivent faire continuelles prieres à ſa divine bonté, à ce qu'il lui plaiſe confirmer & avancer l'œuvre qu'il lui a pleu ſuſciter en ce temps pour l'exaltation de ſon nom, & le ſalut de ſes creatures.

FIN.

[25] Il y a pardela des hommes d'Egliſe de bon ſçavoir que le ſeul zele de la Religion y a porté, leſquels ne manqueront de faire tout ce que la pieté requerra en ce regard. Or quant à preſent il n'eſt pas beſoin de ces Docteurs ſublimes qui peuvent eſtre plus vtiles pardeça à combattre les vices & les hereſies. Ioint qu'il y a certaine forte de gens deſquels on ne ſe peut pas bien aſſeurer faiſans métier de cenſurer tout ce qui ne vient à leurs maximes, & voulans commander par tout. Il ſuffit d'eſtre veillé au dehors ſans avoir de ces epilogueurs qui conſiderent tous les mouvemens de vôtre corps & de vôtre cœur pour en faire regitres, deſquels les plus grands Rois mémes ne ſe peuvẽt defendre. Et puis, que ſerviroiẽt pardela tãt de gens de cette forte, quãt à preſent, ſi ce n'eſt qu'ils

voyage. This Sagamore, being a Christian, by his good example might have caused a great number of others to become Christians. But I am willing to hope, or rather firmly believe, that he will not remain much longer in this error, and that the Sieur will have found some means of attracting him with many others to himself, to impress upon him the vital truths with which he had formerly, in my presence, touched his soul. For the spirit of God has power to drop upon this field fresh dew, which will bring forth a new germination where all has been laid waste and beaten down by the hail. May God, by his grace, guide all in such a way that it will redound to his glory and to the edification of this people, for whom all Christians ought to make continual supplication to his divine goodness, to the end that he may consent to confirm and advance the work, which he has been pleased to begin at this time for the exaltation of his name and for the salvation of his creatures.[21]

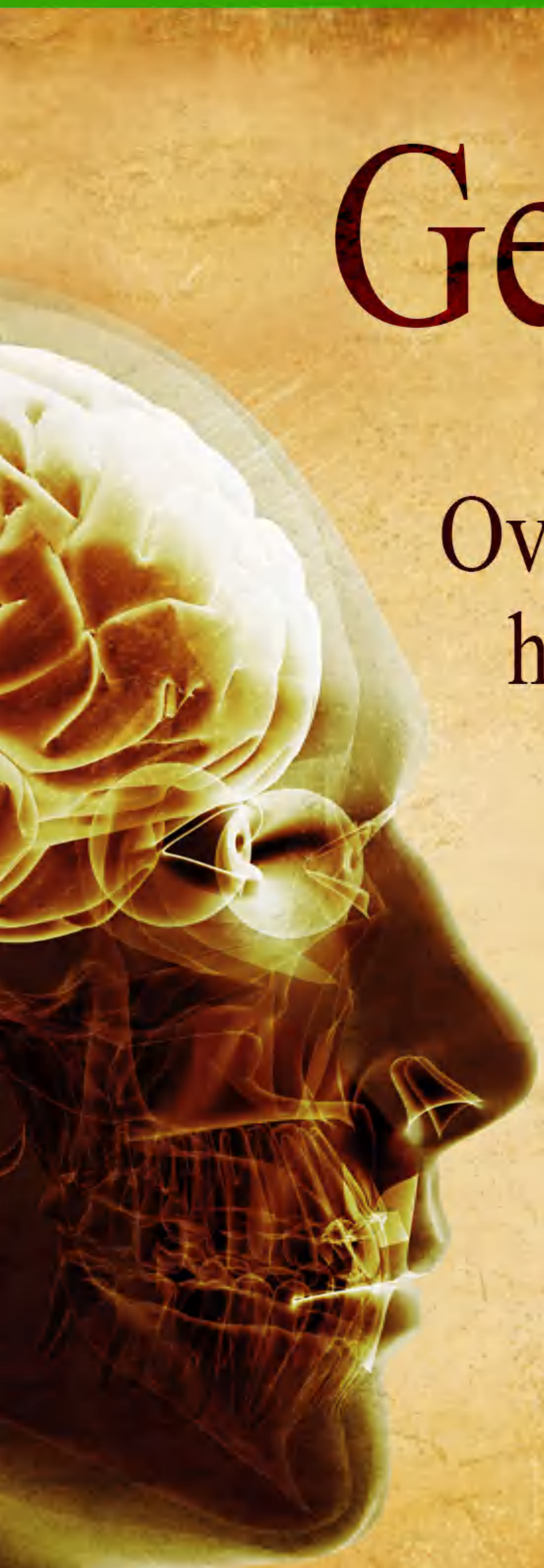
END.

[25] There are in that country some men of the Church, of good scholarship, whom nothing but their religious zeal has taken there, and who will not fail to do all that piety requires in this respect. Now, for the present, there is no need of any learned Doctors who may be more useful in combating vices and heresies at home. Besides, there is a certain class of men in whom we cannot have complete confidence, who are in the habit of censuring everything that is not in harmony with their maxims, and wish to rule wherever they are. It is enough to be watched from abroad without having these fault-finders, from whom even the greatest Kings cannot defend themselves,

vouluſſent s'addonner à la culture de la terre? Car ce n'eſt pas tout que d'aller là. Il faut conſiderer ce que l'on y fera y eſtant arrivé. Pour ce qui eſt de la demeure du Sieur de Poutrincourt il s'eſt fourni au depart de ce qui lui eſtoit neceſſaire. Mais s'il prenoit envie à quelques gens de bien d'y [26] avancer l'Evangile, ie ſeroy d'avis qu'ils fiſſent cinq ou ſix bandes, avec chacun vn navire bien equippé, & qu'ils allaſſent planter des colonies en diverſes places de ces quartiers là, comme à Tadouſſac, Gachepé, Campſeau, la Héve, Oigoudi, Saincte Croix, Pemptegoet, Kinibeki, & autres endroits où font les aſſemblées de Sauvages, leſquels il faut que le temps ameine à la Religion Chrétienne: ſi ce n'eſt qu'vn grand Pere de famille tel que le Roy en vueille avoir la gloire totale, & face habiter ces lieux. Car d'y penſer vivre à leur mode i'eſtime cela eſtre hors de nôtre pouvoir. Et pour le montrer, leur façon de vivre eſt telle, que depuis la premiere terre (qui eſt la Terre-neuve) inſques aux Armouchiquois, qui font pres de trois cens lieuës, les hommes vivent vagabons, ſans labourage, n'eſtans iamais plus de cinq ou ſix ſemaines en vn lieu. Pline à fait mention de certains peuples dits Ichthyophages, c'eſt à dire Mangeurs de poiſſons, viuans de cela. Ceux ci font tout de méme les trois parts de l'année. Car venant le Printẽps ils ſe diviſent par troupes ſur les rives de mer inſques à [27] l'Hiver, lequel venãt, par ce que le poiſſõ ſe retire au fond des grandes eaux ſalées, ilz cherchent les lacs & ombres des bois, où ilz pechent les Caſtors, dont ilz vivẽt, & d'autres chaſſes, comme Ellans, Caribous, Cerfs, & autres animaux moindres que ceux-lá. Et neantmoins quelquefois en Eté méme ilz ne laiſſent point de chaſſer: &

Façon de vivre des Souriquois & Ethechemins.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

d'ailleurs ont infinie quantité d'oyſeaux en certaines iles és mois de May, Iuin, Iuillet, & Aouſt. Quant *le coucher.* à leur coucher, vne peau etendue fur la terre leur ſert de matelas. Et en cela n'avons dequoy nous mocquer d'eux, par ce que noz vieux pereș Gaullois en faiſoient de méme, & dinoiẽt auſſi fur des peaux de chiens & de loups, ſi Diodore & Strabon diſent vray. *Armouchiquois.* Mais quant au pais des Armouchiquois & Iroquois, il y a plus grande moiſſon à faire pour ceux qui font pouſſez d'vn zele religieux, par ce que le peuple y eſt beaucoup plus frequent, & cultive la terre, de laquelle il retire vn grand ſoulagement de vie. Vray eſt qu'il n'entent pas bien la façõ de faire le pain, n'ayant les inventiõs des moulins, ni du levain, ni des fours; ains broye ſon blé en certaine façon de [28] mortiers, & l'empâte au mieux qu'il peut pour le faire cuire entre deux pierres echauffées au feu: ou bien rotit ledit blé en epic fur la braiſe, ainſi que faiſoient les vieux Romains, au dire de Pline. Depuis on trouva le *Plin. liv. 18. chap. 2. & 10.* moyen de faire des gateaux fouz la cendre: & depuis encore les boulengers trouverent la façon des fours. Or ces peuples cultivans la terre font arretés, ce que les autres ne font point, n'ayans rien de propre, tels qu'eſtoient les Allemans au temps de Tacite, lequel a décrit leurs anciennes façons de vivre. Plus avant dans les terres au deſſus des Armouchiquois font les *Iroquois.* Iroquois peuples auſſi arretés, par-ce qu'ilz cultivent la terre, d'où ils recueillent du blé mahis (ou Sarazin) dés féves, des bõnes racines, & bref tout ce que nous avons dit du pays deſdits Armouchiquois, voire encore plus, car par neceſſité ilz vivent de la terre, eſtans loin de la mer. Neantmoins ils ont vn grand lac d'étendue merveilleuſe, comme d'environ 60. lieuës,

Beavers, upon which they live, and other game, as Elk, Caribou, Deer, and still smaller animals. And yet, sometimes even in Summer, they do not give up hunting: besides, there are an infinite number of birds on certain islands ~~in the months~~ of May, June, July and August. As to their beds, a skin spread out upon the ground serves as mattress. And in this we have nothing to jest about, for our old Gallic ancestors did the same thing, and even dined from the skins of dogs and wolves, if Diodorus and Strabo tell the truth. But as to the Armouchiquois and Iroquois countries, there is a greater harvest to be gathered there by those who are inspired by religious zeal, because they are not so sparsely populated, and the people cultivate the soil, from which they derive some of the comforts of life. It is true that they do not understand very well how to make bread, not having mills, yeast, or ovens; so they pound their corn in a kind of [28] mortar, and make a paste of it as best they can, and bake it between two stones heated at the fire; or they roast this corn on the ear upon the live coals, as did the old Romans, according to Pliny. Afterwards people learned to bake cakes under the embers; and still later bakers began to make use of ovens. Now these people who cultivate the soil are stationary, not like the others who have nothing of their own, just as the Germans in the time of Tacitus, who has described their ancient way of living. Farther inland, and beyond the Armouchiquois, are the Iroquois tribes, also stationary, because they till the soil, whence they gather maize wheat (or Buckwheat), beans, edible roots, and in short all that we have mentioned in describing the Armouchiquois, even more, for from necessity they draw their

Their beds.

Armouchiquois.

Pliny, book 18, chap. 2 and 10.

Iroquois.

à lentour duquel ils font cabãnés. Dans ledit lac il y a des iles belles & grandes, habitées deſdits Iroquois, qui font vn grand peuple, & plus on va [29] avant dans les terres plus on les trouve habitées: ſi bien que (s'il en faut croire les Heſpagnols) au pays dit le Nouveau Mexique bien loin pardela leſdits Iroquois, en tirant au Suroüeſt, il y a des villes baties, & des maiſons à trois & quatre etages : méme du beſtial privé: d'où ils ont appellé vne certaine riviere *Rio de las Vaccas*, La riviere des Vaches, pour y en avoir veu en grand nombre paturer le lõg de la riviere. Et eſt ce pays directement au Nort à plus de cinq cens lieuës du vieil Mexique, avoiſinant, comme ie croy, l'extremité du grand lac de la riviere de Canàda, lequel (felon le rapport des Sauvages) a trente journées de long. Ie croiroy que des hommes robuſtes & bien compoſés pourroient vivre parmi ces peuples là, & faire grand fruit à l'avancement de la Religion Chrétienne. Mais quant aux Souriquois, & Etechemins, qui font vagabons & diviſés, il les faut aſſembler par la culture de la terre, & obliger par ce moyen à demeurer en vn lieu. Car quiconque a pris la peine de cultiver vne terre il ne la quitte point aiſement. Il cõbat pour la conſerver de tout ſon courage. [30] Mais ie trouve ce deſſein de longue execution ſi nous n'y allons d'autre zele, & ſi vn Roy ou riche Prince ne prent cette cauſe en main, laquelle certes eſt digne d'vn royaume tres-Chrétien. On a jadis fait tant de depenſes & pertes d'hommes à la reconqueſte de la Paleſtine, à quoy on a peu proufité: & aujourd'hui à peu de frais on pourroit faire des merveilles, & acquerir infinis peuples à Dieu ſans coup ferir: & nous ſommes touchés d'vne ie ne ſçay quelle

Nouveau Mexique.

Grand lac outre Canada.

Conquete de la Paleſtine comparee à celle de la Nouvelle-France.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

lethargie en ce qui eſt du zele religieux qui bruloit noz peres anciennement. Si on n'eſperoit aucun fruit temporel en ceci ie pardonnerois à l'imbecillité humaine. Mais il y a de ſi certaines eſperances d'vne bõne vſure, qu'elles ferment la bouche à tous les ennemis de ce pays là, leſquels le decrient afin de ne perdre la traite des Caſtors & autres pelleteries dont ils vivent, & ſans cela mourroyent de faim, ou ne ſçauroient à quoy s'employer. Que s'il plaiſoit au Roy, & à la Royne Regente ſa mere, en laquelle Dieu a allume vn braſier de pieté, prendre gouſt à ceci (cõme certes elle a faict au rapport de la Converſiõ des Sauvages baptizés par le [31] foin du Sieur de Poutrincourt) & laiſſer quelque memoire d'elle, ou pluſtot s'aſſeurer de la beatitude des cieux par cette action qui eſt toute de Dieu, on ne peut dire quelle gloire à l'avenir ce lui ſeroit d'eſtre la premiere qui auroit planté l'Evangile en de ſi grandes terres, qui (par maniere de dire) n'ont point de bornes. Si Helene mere de l'Empereur Cõſtantin euſt trouvé tant de ſujet de bien-faire, elle euſt beaucoup mieux aimé edifier à Dieu des temples vivans que tant d'edifices de marbre dont elle a rempli la terre ſaincte. Et au bout l'eſperance de la remuneration temporelle n'en eſt poĩt vaine. Car d'une part le Sieur de Poutrincourt demeure toujours ſerviteur du Roy en la terre que ſa Maieſté luy a octroyée: en laquelle il ſeroit le rendezvous & ſupport de tant de vaiſſeaux qui vont tous les ans aux Terres neuves, où ilz reçoivent mille incommodités, & en perit grand nombre, comme nous avons veu & oui dire. Dailleurs penetrant dans les terres, nous pourrions nous rendre familier le chemin de la Chine & des Molucques par vn climat & parallele tẽperé, en

Au Roy & à la Royne.

be accomplished, and an infinite number of people won over to God, without striking a blow: and yet we are touched by an inexplicable apathy in religious matters, which is quite different from the fervid zeal which of old burned in the bosoms of our fathers. If we did not expect any temporal fruit from these labors, I would pardon this human weakness. But there are such well-founded hopes of good usury, that they close the mouths of all the enemies of that country, who decry it in order not to lose the traffic in Beaver and other furs from which they gain a livelihood, and without which they would die of starvation or would not know what to do. But if the King and the Queen Regent, his mother, in whom God has kindled a fire of piety, should be pleased to take an interest in this (as she has certainly done in the report of the Conversion of the Savages, baptized through the [31] instrumentality of Sieur de Poutrincourt) and would leave some memorial of herself, or rather would secure for herself the blessedness of heaven by this most godly act, no one can tell how great would be her future glory in being the first to establish the Gospel in such vast territories, which (so to speak) have no bounds. If Helena, the mother of the Emperor Constantine, had found such a field for good work, she would have greatly preferred to glorify God with living temples, instead of building so many marble edifices, with which she has filled the holy land. And, after all, the hope of temporal profit is not vain. For on one hand Sieur de Poutrincourt will continue to be the servant of the King in the country which his Majesty has granted him; where he would afford a rendezvous and give assistance to all the vessels which go every year to the new

Appeal to the King and the Queen Regent.

Moyens pour aller aux Molucques par le Ponant & le Nort.

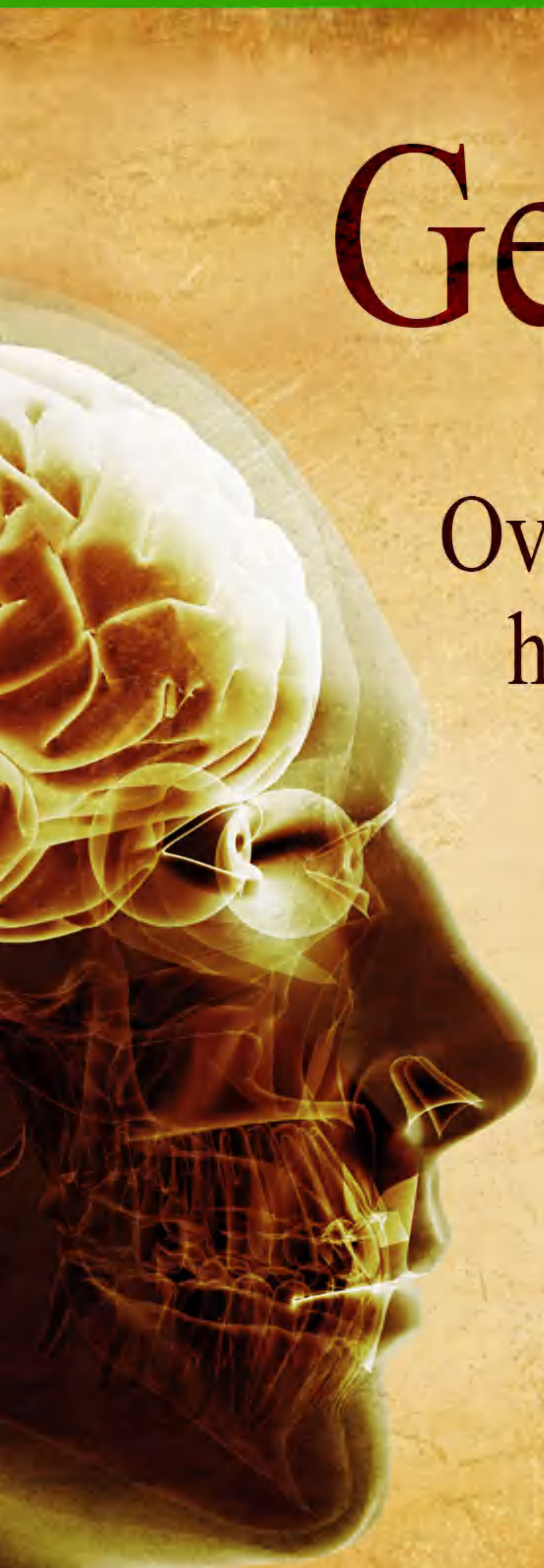
faiſant quelques ſtatiõs ou [32] demeures au Saut de la grande riviere de Canada, puis aux lacs qui font plus outre, le dernier deſquels n'eſt pas loin de la grande mer Occidentale, par laquelle les Heſpagnols vont aujourd'hui en l'Orient: Ou bien on pouroit faire la méme entrepriſe par la riviere de Saguenay, outre laquelle les Sauvages rapportent qu'il y a vne mer dont ilz n'ont veu le bout, qui eſt fans doute ce paſſage par le Nort, lequel en vain l'on a tant recherché. De forte que nous aurions des epices, & autres drogues fans les mendier deſdits Hespagnols, & demeureroit és mains du Roy le prouſit qu'il tire de nous fur ces denrées: Laiſſant à part l'vtilité des cuirs, paturages, pecheries, & autres biens. Mais il faut ſemer avant que recuillir. Par ces exercices on occuperoit beaucoup de ieuneſſe Françoiſe, dont vne partie languit ou de pauvreté, ou d'oiſiveté: ou vont aux provinces etrangeres enſeigner les metiers qui nous eſtoient iadis propres & particuliers, au moyen dequoy la France eſtoit remplie de biens, au lieu qu'aujourd'hui vne longue paix ne l'a encore peu remettre en ſon premier luſtre, tant [33] pour la raiſon que deſſus, que pour le nombre de gens oiſifs, & mendians valides & volontaires que le public nourrit. Entre leſquelles incommodités on pourroit mettre encore le mal de la chiquanerie qui mange noſtre nation, dõt elle a eſté blamée de tout temps. A quoy ſeroit aucunement obvié par les frequẽtes navigations: eſtant ainſi qu'une partie de ceux qui plaident auroient pluſtot fait de conqueſter nouvelle terre, demeurans en l'obeiſſance du Roy, que de pourſuivre ce qu'ilz debattent avec tant de ruines, longueurs, folicitudes, & travaux. Et en ce ie repute heureux tous

Vtilités.

Chiquanerie.

Ammiã Marcellin..

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Felicité des Sauvages.

ces pauvres peuples que ie deplore ici. Car la blafarde Envie ne les amaigrit poĩt ilz ne reſſentent point les inhumanités d'vn qui fert Dieu en torticoli, pour fouz cette couleur tourmenter les hommes; ilz ne font point ſujets au calcul de ceux qui manquans de vertu & de bonté s'affublent d'vn faux pretexte de pieté pour nourrir leur ambition. S'ilz ne conoiſſent point Dieu, au moins ne le blaſphement ilz point, comme font la pluſpart des Chretiens. Ilz ne ſçavent que c'eſt d'empoiſonner, ni de corrompre la [34] chaſteté par artifice diabolique. Il n' y a point de pauvres, ny de mendians entre eux. Tous font riches, entant que tous travaillent & vivent. Mais entre nous il va bien autrement. Car il y en a plus de la moitié qui vit du labeur d'autrui, ne faiſant aucun metier qui ſoit neceſſaire à la vie humaine. Que ſi ce païs là eſtoit etabli, tel y a qui n'oſe faire ici ce qu'il feroit là. Il n'oſe point ici eſtre bucheron, laboureur, vigneron, &c. par ce que ſõ pere eſt chiquaneur, barbier, apothicaire &c. Et là il oublieroit toutes ces aprehenſions de reproche, & prendroit plaiſir à cultiver ſa terre, ayant beaucoup de compagnons d'auſſi bonne maiſon que lui. Et cultiver la terre c'eſt le metier le plus innocent, & plus certain, exercice de ceux de qui nous ſommes tous deſcendus, & de ces braves Capitaines Romains qui ſçavoient domter & ne point eſtre domtés. Mais depuis que la pompe & la malice ſe font introduits parmi les hommes, ce qui eſtoit vertu a tourné en reproche, & les faineans ſont venus en eſtime. Or laiſſons ces gens là, & revenons au Sieur de Poutrincourt, ains pluſtot a vous, ô Royne Tref-Chretienne, [35] la plus grande, & plus cherie des cieux que l'œil du monde voye en la rõde qu'il fait

Pour ceux qui vont en la N. France.

A la Royne.

somewhat obviated by frequent voyages; for a part of these pettifoggers would sooner conquer some new land, remaining under the dominion of the King, than follow up their cause here with so much loss, delay, anxiety, and labor. And, in this respect, I consider all these poor savages, whom we commiserate, to be very happy; for pale Envy doth not emaciate them, neither do they feel the inhumanity of those who serve God hypocritically, harassing their fellow-creatures under this mask: nor are they subject to the artifices of those who, lacking virtue and goodness wrap themselves up in a mantle of false piety to nourish their ambition. If they do not know God, at least they do not blaspheme him, as the greater number of Christians do. Nor do they understand the art of poisoning, or of corrupting [34] chastity by devilish artifice. There are no poor nor beggars among them. All are rich, because all labor and live. But among us it is very different, for more than half of us live from the labors of the others, having no trades which serve to the support of human life. If that country were settled, there are men who would do there what they have not courage to do here. Here they would not dare to be wood-cutters, husbandmen, vinedressers, etc., because their fathers were pettifoggers, barber-surgeons, and apothecaries. But over yonder they would forget their fear of being ridiculed, and would take pleasure in cultivating their land, having a great many companions of as good families as theirs. Cultivating the soil is the most innocent of occupations and the most sure; it was the occupation of those from whom we have all descended, and of those brave Roman Captains who knew how to subjugate, but not how to be subjugated.

Ammianus Marcellinus.

Happiness of the Savages.

Opportunities for emigrants to New France.

chaque iour alentour de cet vnivers. Vous qui avés le maniement du plus noble Empire dici bas, Quoy ſouffrirez vous de voir vn Gentil-hõme de ſi bonne volonté ſans l'employer & ſans le ſecourir? Voulez vous qu'il emporte la premiere gloire du monde par deſſus vous, & que le triomphe de cet affaire luy demeure ſans que vous y participiés? Non, non, Madame, il faut que le tout vous en ſoit rapporté, & que cõme les etoilles empruntent leur lumiere du ſoleil, auſſi que du Roy & de vous qui nous l'avés dõné toutes les belles actiõs des François depẽdent. Il faut donc prevenir cette gloire, & ne la ceder à autre, tandis que vous avés vn Poutrincourt bon François, & qui a ſervi le feu Roy de regretable memoire vôtre Epoux (que Dieu abſolve) en des affaires d'Eſtat dont les hiſtoires ne ſont mention.: En haine dequoy ſa maiſon & ſes biens ont paſſé par l'examen du feu Il ne paſſe point l'Ocean pour voir le païs, comme ont fait préque tous les autres qui ont entrepris de ſemblables navigations [36] aux dépens de noz Roys. Mais il mõtre par effect quelle eſt ſon intentiõ, ſi bien qu'on n'en peut point douter, & ne hazarderez rien maintenant quand vôtre Majeſté l'employera à bon eſcient à l'amplificatiõ de la religion Chrétienne és terres Occidentales d'outre mer. Vous reconoiſſez ſon zele, le vôtre eſt incomparable, mais il faut aviſer où ſe pourra mieux faire vôtre emploite. Ie louë les Princeſſes & Dames qui depuis quinze ans ont dõné de leurs biens pour le repos de ceux ou celles qui ſe veulent ſequeſtrer du monde. Mais i'eſtime (ſauf correction) que leur pieté ſeroit plus illuſtre ſi elle ſe montroit envers ces pauvres peuples Occidentaux qui gemiſſent, & dont le defaut d'inſtruction crie ven-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

geance à Dieu contre ceux qui les peuvent ayder à eſtre Chrétiens, & ne le font pas. Vne Royne de Caſtille a eſté cauſe que la religion Chrétienne a eſté portée és terres que tient l'Heſpagnol en Occident: faites ô lumiere des Roynes du monde, que par vous bientot on oye eclater le nom de Dieu par tout ce monde nouveau où il n'eſt point encore coneu. Or reprenant le fil de mõ [37] Hiſtoire, puiſque nous avons parlé du voyage dudit Sieur de Poutrincourt, il ne fera point hors de propos ſi apres avoir touché les incommodités & longueurs de ſa navigation, qui l'ont reculé d'vn an, nous diſons vn mot du retour de ſon vaiſſeau. Ce qui fera bref, d'autant qu'ordinairement font bréves les navigations qui ſe font des terres Occidentales en deça hors le Tropique du Cancre. I'ay rendu la raiſon de cela en mon Hiſtoire de la Nouvelle-France, où ie renvoye le Lecteur: comme auſſi pour ſçavoir la raiſon pourquoy en Eté la mer y eſt remplie de brumes en telle forte que pour vn jour ſerein il y en a deux de broüillas: & deux fois m'y fuis trouvé parmi des brumes de huict jours entiers. Ceci e eſté cauſe que ledit Sieur de Poutrincourt renvoyant ſon fils en France pour faire nouvelle charge, il a demeuré auſſi long temps à gaigner le grand Banc aux Moruës depuis le Port Royal, comme à gaigner la France depuis ledit Banc: & toutefois depuis icelui Banc juſques à la terre de France il y a huit cens bonnes lieuës: & de là méme juſques audit Port Royal il n'y en a gueres [38] plus de trois cens. C'eſt fur ledit Banc qu'on trouve ordinairement tout l'Eté force navires qui font la Pecherie des Moruës qu'on apporte pardeça, leſquelles on appelle Moruës de Terre-neuve. Ainſi le fils dudit Sieur de Poutrincourt (dit

Liv. 1. ch. 24. & li. 2. ch. 41. & 42.

Que c'eſt ce Banc Voy la dite Hiſtoire liv. 2. chap. 24.

cesses and Ladies who for fifteen years have given of their means for the repose of those men or women who wished to sequester themselves from the world. But I believe (under correction) that their piety would shine with greater luster if it were shown in behalf of these poor Western nations, who are in a lamentable condition, and whose lack of instruction cries to God for vengeance against those who might help them to become Christians, and will not. A Queen of Castille caused the Christian religion to be introduced into the lands of the West which belong to Spain; so act, O light of the Queens of the world, that through your instrumentality, the name of God may soon be proclaimed throughout all this new world, where it is not yet known. Now resuming the thread of our [37] History, as we have spoken of the voyage of Sieur de Poutrincourt, it will not be out of place, if, after having touched upon the hardships and tediousness of his journey, which retarded him one year, we say a word about the return of his ship, which will be brief, inasmuch as the voyages from the Western world, this side of the Tropic of Cancer, are usually so. I have given the reason for this in my History of New France, to which I refer the Reader, where he will also learn why it is that in Summer the sea there is overhung with fogs to such an extent that for one clear day there are two foggy ones; and twice we were in fogs which lasted eight entire days. This is why Sieur de Poutrincourt's son, when he was sent back to France for fresh supplies, was as long in reaching the great Codfish Banks from Port Royal, as in getting to France from the said Banks; and yet from these Banks to the coast of France there are eight hundred good leagues; and

Book 1, ch. 24, and book 2, ch. 41 and 42.

For these Banks, see the said History, book 2, ch. 24.

La maniere de cette pecherie, voy au lieu ſuſdit.

le Baron de Sainct Iuſt) arrivãt audit Banc fit proviſion de viande freche, & pecherie de poiſſon. En quoy faiſant il eut en rencontre vn navire Rochelois & vn autre du Havre de Grace, d'où il eut nouvelles de la mort lamentable de nôtre defunct bon Roy, fans ſçavoir par qui, ni comment. Mais apres eut en rencontre vn autre navire Anglois, d'où il entendit la méme chofe, accuſans du parricide des gens que ie ne veux ici nõmer: car ils le diſoient par haine & envie, n'ayans plus grans adverſaires qu'eux.

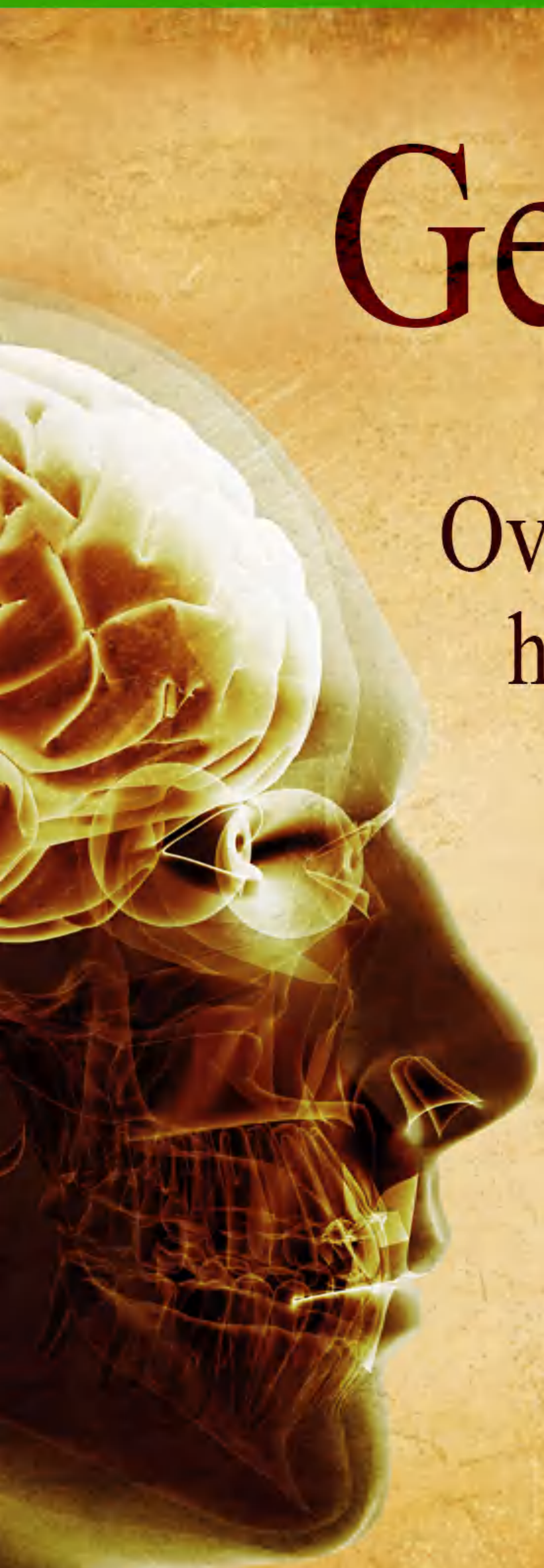
En 15. jours du Banc en France.

En quinze jours donc ledit Sieur de Sainct Iuſt fut rendu dudit Banc en France, ayant toujours eu vent en poupe: navigation certes beaucoup plus agreable que celle du vingtſixieme de Février mentionnée ci-deſſus. Les gens du Sieur de Monts partirent du Havre de Grace neuf ou dix jours apres ledit jour 26. Février pour aller à Kebec, 40. lieuës pardela [39] la riviere de Saguenay, où icelui Sieur de Monts s'eſt fortifié. Mais ilz furent contraints de relacher pour les mauvais vents. Et là deſſus courut vn bruit que le Sieur de Poutrincourt eſtoit peri en mer, & tout ſon equipage. A quoy ie n'adjoutay onques foy, croyant pour certain que Dieu l'aidera, & le fera paſſer par-deſſus toutes difficultez.

Kebec Fort du Sieur de Monts.

Nous n'avons encore nouvelles dudit Kebec, & en attendons bien-tot. Mais ie puis dire pour la verité que ſi jamais quelque chofe de bon reüſſit de la Nouvelle-France la poſterité en aura de l'obligatiõ audit Sieur de Monts autheur de ces choſes, auquel ſi on n'euſt point oté le privilege qui lui avoit eſté baillé pour la traite de Caſtors & autres pelleteries, aujourd'hui nous aurions force beſtiaux, arbres fruictiers, peuples, & batimẽs en ladite province. Car il a deſiré ardamment de voir pardela les affaires etablies à

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

l'honneur de Dieu & de la France. Et jaçoit qu'on lui ait oté le ſujet de continuer, ſi ne s'eſt il point decouragé juſques à preſent de faire ce qu'il a peu, ayant fait batir vn Fort audit Kebec, avec des logemens fort beaux & commodes. En ce lieu de Kebec cette [40] grande & immenſe riviere de Canada eſt reduite à l'étroit, & n'a que la portée d'vn fauconneau de large, abõdante en poiſſons autant que riviere du monde. Pour le pays il eſt beau à merveilles, & abondant en chaſſe. Mais eſtant en pays plus froid que le port Royal, aſſavoir quatre vingtz lieuës plus au Nort, auſſi la pelleterie y eſt elle beaucoup plus belle. Car (entre autres) les Renars y font noirs, & d'vn poil ſi beau, qu'il ſemble faire honte à la Martre. Les Sauvages du Port Royal y peuvent aller en dix ou douze jours par le moyen des rivieres fur leſquelles ils navigent préque juſques à la ſource, & de là portans leurs petits canots d'écorce par quelque eſpace dans les bois, ils gaignent vne autre riviere qui va tomber dans ledit fleuve de Canada, & ainſi expedient bien-tot de lõgs voyages: ce que de nous-mémes ne ſçaurions faire en l'etat qu'eſt le païs. Et par mer audit Kebec il y a dudit Port Royal plus de quatre cens lieuës en allant par le Cap Breton. Ledit Sieur de Monts y auoit envoyé des vaches dés il y a deux ans & demi, mais faute de quelque femme de village qui entendiſt le [41] gouvernement d'icelles, on en a laiſſé mourir la pluſpart en ſe dechargeant de leurs veaux. En quoy ſe reconoit combien vne femme eſt neceſſaire en vne maiſon, laquelle ie ne ſçay pourquoy tant de gens rejettent, & ne s'en peuvent paſſer. Quant à moy ie ſeray toujours d'auis qu'en quelque habitation que ce ſoit on ne fera jamais fruit ſans la

Femmes combien neceſſaires.

and if they had not taken away the license which was granted him to trade in Beaver and other skins, to-day we should have had a vast number of cattle, fruit-trees, people, and buildings in the said province. For he earnestly desired to see everything established there to the honor of God and of France. And, although he has been deprived of the motive for continuing, yet up to the present he does not seem discouraged in doing what he can; for he has had built at Kebec a Fort and some very good and convenient dwellings. Here at Kebec this [40] great and mighty river of Canada narrows down and is only a falcon-shot wide; it has as great a supply of fish as any river in the world. As to the country, it is wonderfully beautiful, and abounds in game. But being in a colder region than port Royal, since it is eighty leagues farther North, the fur there is all the finer. For (among other animals) the Foxes are black and of such beautiful fur that they seem to put the Martens to shame. The Savages of Port Royal can go to Kebec in ten or twelve days by means of the rivers, which they navigate almost up to their sources; and thence, carrying their little bark canoes for some distance through the woods, they reach another stream which flows into the river of Canada, and thus greatly expedite their long voyages, which we ourselves could not do in the present state of the country. And from Port Royal to Kebec by sea it is more than four hundred leagues, going by way of Cape Breton. Sieur de Monts sent some cows there two years and a half ago, but for want of some village housewife who understood [41] taking care of them, they let the greater part die in giving birth to their calves. Which shows how necessary a woman is in

The need of women.

compagnie des femmes. Sans elles la vie eſt triſte, les maladies viennent, & meurt on ſans ſecours. C'est pourquoy ie me mocque de ces myſogames qui leur ont voulu tant de mal, & particulierement i'en veux à ce fol qu'on a mis au nombre des ſept Sages, lequel diſoit que la femme eſt vn mal neceſſaire, veu qu'il n'y a bien au monde comparable à elle. Auſſi Dieu la il baillée *pour compagne à l'homme, afin de l aider & conſoler:* & le Sage dit que *Malheureux eſt l'hõme qui eſt ſeul, car il n'a perſonne qui l echauffe, & s'il tombe en la foſſe il n'a perſonne pour le relever.* Que s'il y a des femmes folles, il faut eſtimer que les hommes ne font point sãs faute. De ce defaut de vaches pluſieurs ſe font reſſentis, car eſtant tombés malades ilz n'ont pas eu toutes les douceurs [42] qu'autrement ils euſſent euës, & s'en font allez promener aux champs Eliſées. Vn autre qui auoit eſté de nôtre voyage, n'eut point la patience d'attendre cela, & voulut gaigner le ciel par eſcalade dés le commencement de ſon arrivée, par vne conſpiration contre le sieur Champlein ſon Capitaine. Les complices furent condemnés aux galeres, & ramenés en France. L'Eté venu aſſavoir il y a vn an, ledit Champlein deſireux de voir le païs des Iroquois, afin qu'en ſon abſence les Sauvages ne ſe ſaiſiſſent point de ſon Fort, il leur perſuada d'aller là faire la guerre, & partirent avec lui & deux autres François, en nõbre de quatre-vingts ou cent, iuſques au lac deſdits Iroquois, à deux cẽs lieües loin dudit Kebec. De tout temps il y a eu guerre entre ces deux nations, comme entre les Souriquois & Armouchiquois: & ſe ſont quelquefois elevés les Iroquois juſques au nõbre de huit mille hommes, pour guerroyer & exterminer tous ceux qui habitoient

Eccleſi. 4 verſ. 10.

Conſpiration chatiee.

Voyage aux Iroquois.

Peuples ennemis.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

la grande riviere de Canada: comme il eſt à croire qu'ils ont fait, d'autant que là n'eſt plus aujourd'hui le langage qui s'y parloit au [43] temps de Iacques Quartier, qui y fut il y a quatre-vingts ans. Ledit Champlein avec ſes troupes arrivé là, ilz ne ſe peurent ſi bien cacher qu'ilz ne fuſſent apperceuz de ces peuples,

Guerre. qui ont toujours des ſentinelles ſur les avenües de leurs ennemis: & s'eſtans les vns & les autres bien remparés, il fut convenu entre eux de ne point combattre pour ce jour là, mais de remettre l'affaire au lendemain. Le temps lors eſtoit ſerein: ſi bien que l'Aurore n'eut point plutot chaſſé les ombres de la nuit, que la rumeur s'emeût par tout le camp. Quelque enfant perdu des Iroquois ayant voulu ſortir de ſes rempars, fut tranſpercé non d'un trait d'Apollon, ou de l'Archerot aux yeux bendés, mais d'un vray trait materiel & bien poignant qui le mit à la renverſe. Là deſſus, la colere monte au front des offenſés & chacun ſe met en ordre pour attaquer & ſe defendre. Comme la troupe des Iroquois s'avançoit, Champlein qui avoit chargé ſon mouſquet à deux balles, voyant deux Iroquois marcher devant avec des panaches ſur la tête, ſe douta que c'eſtoient deux Capitaines, & voulut s'avancer [44] pour les mirer. Mais les Sauvages de Kebec l'empecherent, diſans: Il n'eſt pas bon qu'ilz te voyent, car incontinent, n'ayans point accoutumé de voir telles gens, ilz s'en fuiront. Mais retire toy derriere le premier rang des nôtres, & puis quand nous ferons prets, tu devanceras. Ce qu'il fit: & par ce moyen furent les deux Capitaines tout enſemble emportés d'vn coup de mouf-

Victorie. quet. Lors victoire gaignée. Car chacun ſe debende, & ne reſtoit qu'à pourſuivre. Ce qui fut fait avec

the Iroquois, two hundred leagues distant from Kebec. There has always been war between these two nations, as there has been between the Souriquois and Armouchiquois: and sometimes the Iroquois have raised as many as eight thousand men to war against and exterminate all those who live near the great river of Canada: and it seems that they did this, as to-day the language which was spoken in the [43] time of Jacques Quartier, who was there eighty years ago, is no longer heard in that region.[22] When Champlein arrived there with his troops, they could not conceal themselves so well but that they were perceived by the Iroquois, who always have sentinels upon the routes of their enemies: and each side being well fortified, it was agreed among them not to fight that day, but to postpone the affair until the morrow. The weather then was very clear; so clear that scarcely had Aurora chased away the shadows of the night, than a din was heard throughout the camp. An Iroquois skirmisher having tried to issue from the fortifications, was pierced through, not by one of the arrows of Apollo, nor of the little Archer with the blindfolded eyes, but by a genuine and very painful arrow, which stretched him out upon his back. Thereupon the eyes of the offended were full of ire, and each one takes his place in the line of attack and defense. As the band of Iroquois advances, Champlein, who had charged his musket with two balls, seeing two Iroquois, their heads adorned with feathers, marching on in front, supposed they were two Captains, and wanted to advance [44] and aim at them. But the Kebec Savages prevented him, saying:—"It is not well that they should see thee, for, never having been accustomed

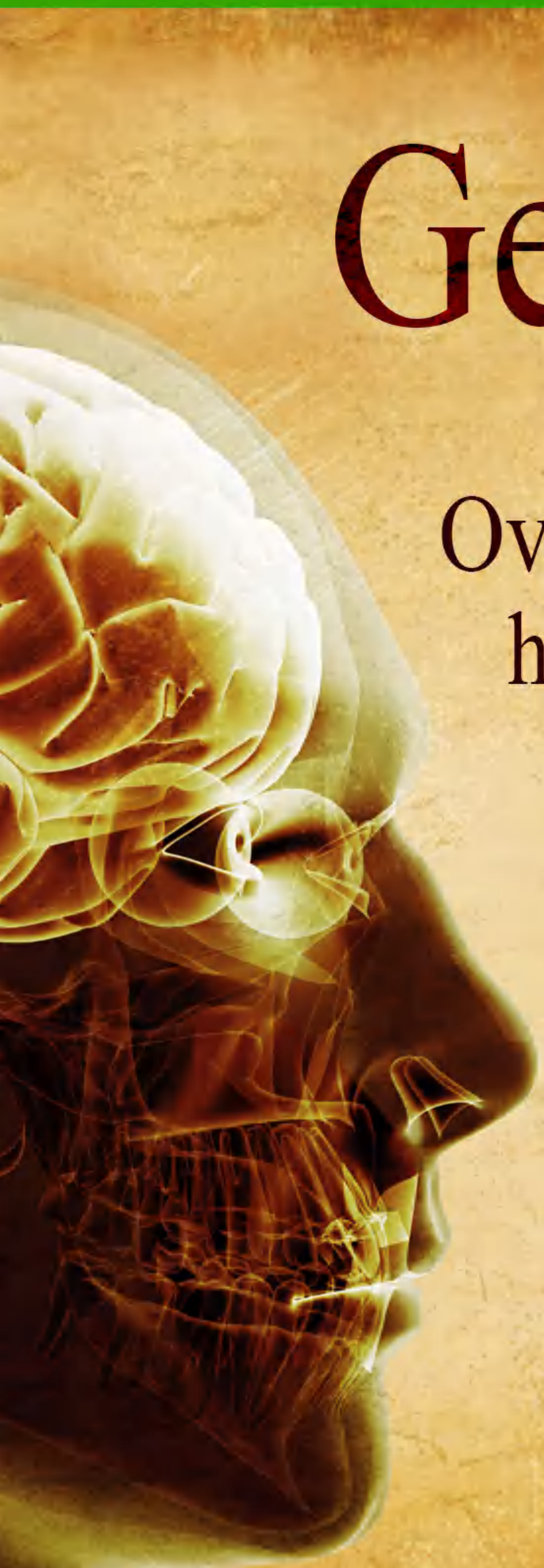
Hostile nations.

War.

Tabagie, c'eſt feſt.

peu de reſiſtance, & emporterent environ cinquante têtes de leurs ennemis, dont au retour ilz firent de merveilleuſes fêtes en Tabagies, danſes, & chanſons continuelles, felon leur coutume.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[45] Extrait dv Regitre de Bapteme de l'Eglise dv Port Royal en la Nouvelle France. Le iovr Sainct Iehan Baptiſte 24. de Iuin.

MEMBERTOV grand Sagamos âgé de plus de cent ans a eſté baptizé par Meſſire Ieſſé Fleche Pretre, & nommé HENRY par Monſieur de Poutrincourt au nom du Roy.

2. MEMBERTOVCOICHIS (dit Iudas) fils ainé de Membertov âgé de plus de 60. ans, auſſi baptizé, & nommé LOVIS par Monſieur de Biencour au nom de Monſieur le Dauphin.

3. Le fils ainé de Membertoucoichis dit à preſent Louïs Membertou, âgé de cinq ans, baptizé & tenu par Monſieur de Poutrincourt, qui l'a nomme IEHAN de ſon nom.

4. La fille ainée dudit Louïs âgée de treze ans auſſi baptizée, & nommée CHRISTINE par ledit Sieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Madame la fille ainée de France.

5. La feconde fille dudit Louïs âgée d'onze ans auſſi baptizée, & nommée ELIZABETH par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Madame la fille puiſnée de France.

6. La troiſieme fille dudit Louïs tenuë par ledit Sieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Madame ſa femme auſſi baptizée, nommée CLAVDE.

7. La 4. fille dudit Louïs tenuë par Monſieur de Coullogne pour Madamoiſelle ſa mere, a eu nom CATHERINE.

[45] Extract from the Register of Baptism in the Church of Port Royal, New France. The day of Saint John the Baptist, June 24.

MEMBERTOU, a great Sagamore, over one hundred years old, has been baptized by Messire Jessé Fleche,[25] a priest; and named HENRY, by Monsieur de Poutrincourt, after the late king.

2. MEMBERTOUCOICHIS (called Judas), eldest son of Membertou, over sixty years old, also baptized; and named LOUIS, by Monsieur de Biencour, after Monsieur the Dauphin.

3. The eldest son of Membertoucoichis, now called Louis Membertou, aged five years, baptized; Monsieur de Poutrincourt godfather, and named JOHN, after himself.

4. The eldest daughter of said Louis, aged thirteen years, also baptized; and named CHRISTINE by Sieur de Poutrincourt, after Madame the eldest daughter of France.

5. The second daughter of the said Louis, eleven years old, also baptized; and named ELIZABETH by Sieur de Poutrincourt, after Madame, the youngest daughter of France.

6. The third daughter of said Louis, Sieur de Poutrincourt godfather, also baptized, and named CLAUDE, in honor of his wife.

7. The fourth daughter of said Louis, Monsieur de Coullogne godfather, was named CATHERINE, after his mother.

8. La 5. fille dudit Louïs a eu nom IEHANNE ainſi nõmée par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nõ d'une de ſes filles. [¶6]

9. La 6. fille dudit Louïs tenuë par René Maheu a eſté nommée CHARLOTTE du nom de ſa mere.

10. ACTAVDINECH, troiſieme fils dudit Henri Membertou a eſté nommé PAVL par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom du Pape Paul.

11. La femme dudit Paul a eſté nommée RENEE du nom de Madame d'Ardanville.

12. La femme dudit Henri a eſté tenuë par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de la Royne, & nommée MARIE de ſon nom.

13. La fille dudit Henri tenuë par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt, & nommée MARGVERITE au nom de la Royne Marguerite.

14. L'vne des femmes dudit Louïs tenuë par Monſieur de Iouï pour Madame de Sigogne, nommée de ſon nom.

15. L'autre femme dudit Louïs tenuë par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Madame de Dampierre.

16. ARNEST couſin dudit Henri a eſté tenu par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Monſieur le Nonce, & nommé ROBERT de ſon nom.

17. AGOVDEGOVEN auſſi couſin dudit Henri a eſté nommé NICOLAS par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Monſieur des Noyers Advocat au Parlement de Paris.

18. La femme dudit Nicolas tenuë par ledit ſieur de Poutrincourt au nom de Monſieur ſon neveu, a eu nom PHILIPPE.

19. La fille ainée d'icelui Nicolas tenuë par le dit Sieur pour Madame de Belloy ſa niepce, & nommée LOVISE de ſon nom.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

20. La puiſ-née dudit Nicolas tenuë par ledit ſieur pour Iacques de Salazar ſon fils, a eſté nommée IACQVELINE.

21. Vne niepce dudit Henri tenuë par Monſieur de Coullongne au nom de Madamoiſelle de Grandmare, & nommée ANNE de ſon nom.

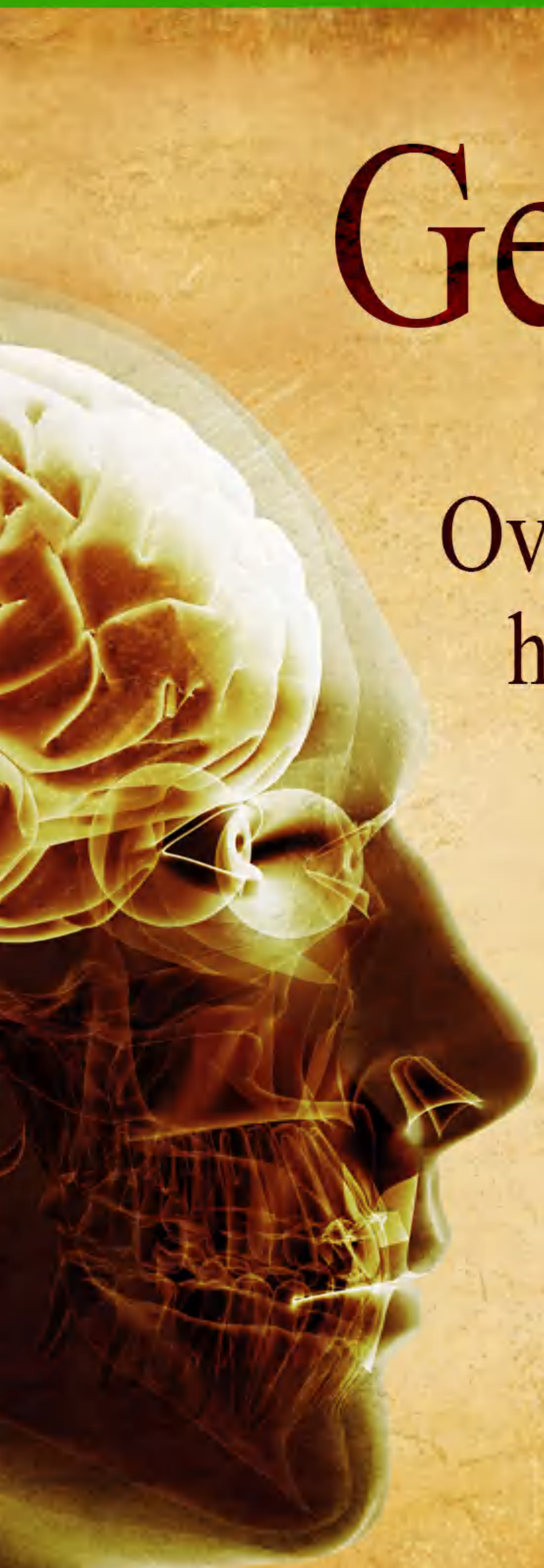
LOVE´ SOIT DIEV.

sieur being godfather for Jacques de Salazar, his son, was named JACQUELINE.

21. A niece of Henry, Monsieur de Coullongne sponsor in the name of Mademoiselle de Grandmare, was after her named ANNE.

PRAISED BE GOD.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



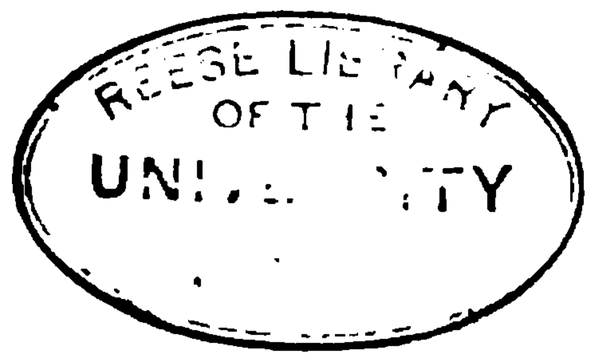
Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies


REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY

LETTRE MISSIVE, TOVCHANT LA CONVERSION ET BAPtesme du grand Sagamos de la nouuelle Frãce, qui en estoit auparauant l'arriuée des François le chef & souuerain.

Contenant sa promesse d'amener ses subiets à la mesme Conuersion, ou les y contraindre par la force des armes.

Enuoyée du Port Royal de la nouuelle France au Sr de la Tronchaie, datée du 28. Iuin 1610.

A PARIS,

Chez IEAN REGNOVL, ruë du Foin, pres sainct Yues.

1610.

Auec permission.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[3] Lettre Miſſive, Tovchant la Converſion et Bapteſme du Grand Sagamos de la nouuelle France, qui en eſtoit auparauant l'arriuée des François chef & ſouuerain.

MONSIEVR & Frere, Ie n'ay voulu laiſſer partir le nauire ſans vous faire ſçauoir des nouuelles de ce païs que ie croy aurez agreables, d'autant que ie ſçay, qu'eſtes bon Catholique, C'eſt que le Grand Sagamos, qui ſe dit en noſtre langue Grand Capitaine des Sauuages, & le premier de tous, s'eſt fait baptiſer le iour de la ſainct Iean Baptiſte derniere, [4] auec ſa femme, ſes enfans, & enfans de ſes enfans, iuſques au nombre de vingt: auec autant de ferueur, ardeur & zele à la Religion que pourroit faire vn qui y auroit eſté inſtruict depuis trois ou quatre ans: Il promet faire baptizer les autres, autrement qu'il leur fera la guerre: Monſieur de Poutrincourt & Monſieur ſon fils les ont tenus au nom du Roy, & de Monſeigneur le Dauphin. C'eſt deſia vn beau commencement, ie croy que cy apres ce fera encores mieux: Quant au pays, iamais ie n'ay veu rien de ſi beau, meilleur ny plus fertile, & vous dis auec verité, & fans mentir, que ſi i'auois trois ou quatre Laboureurs maintenant auec moy, & [5] pour les nourrir vne année, & du bled pour enſemencer le labourage qu'ils pourroient faire de leurs bras ſeulement, du ſurplus qui me reuiendroit apres leur nourriture, i'eſpererois faire trafiq tous les ans de ſept ou huict mille liures en Caſtors & Pelleterie: Ie ſuis bien marry auant que

Les nouuelles de la mort du Roy n'eſtoiẽt encores en ce pays là.

[3] A Letter Missive in regard to the Conversion and Baptism of the Grand Sagamore of new France, who was, before the arrival of the French, its chief and sovereign.

SIR and Brother, I did not wish the ship to depart without giving you some news of this country which I believe will be acceptable, as I know that you are a good Catholic. The Grand Sagamore, whom we call in our language Grand Captain of the Savages, and chief of all, was baptized on last saint John the Baptist's day, [4] with his wife, children, and children's children, to the number of twenty; with as much enthusiasm, fervor, and zeal for Religion as would have been evinced by a person who had been instructed in it for three or four years. He promises to have the others baptized, or else make war upon them. Monsieur de Poutrincourt and his son acted as sponsors for them in the name of the King, and of Monseigneur the Dauphin. We have already made this good beginning, which I believe will become still better hereafter. As to the country, I have never seen anything so beautiful, better, or more fertile; and I can say to you, truly and honestly, that if I had three or four Laborers with me now, and [5] the means of supporting them for one year, and some wheat to sow in the ground tilled by their labor alone, I should expect to have a yearly trade in Beaver and other Skins amounting to seven or eight thousand livres, with the sur-

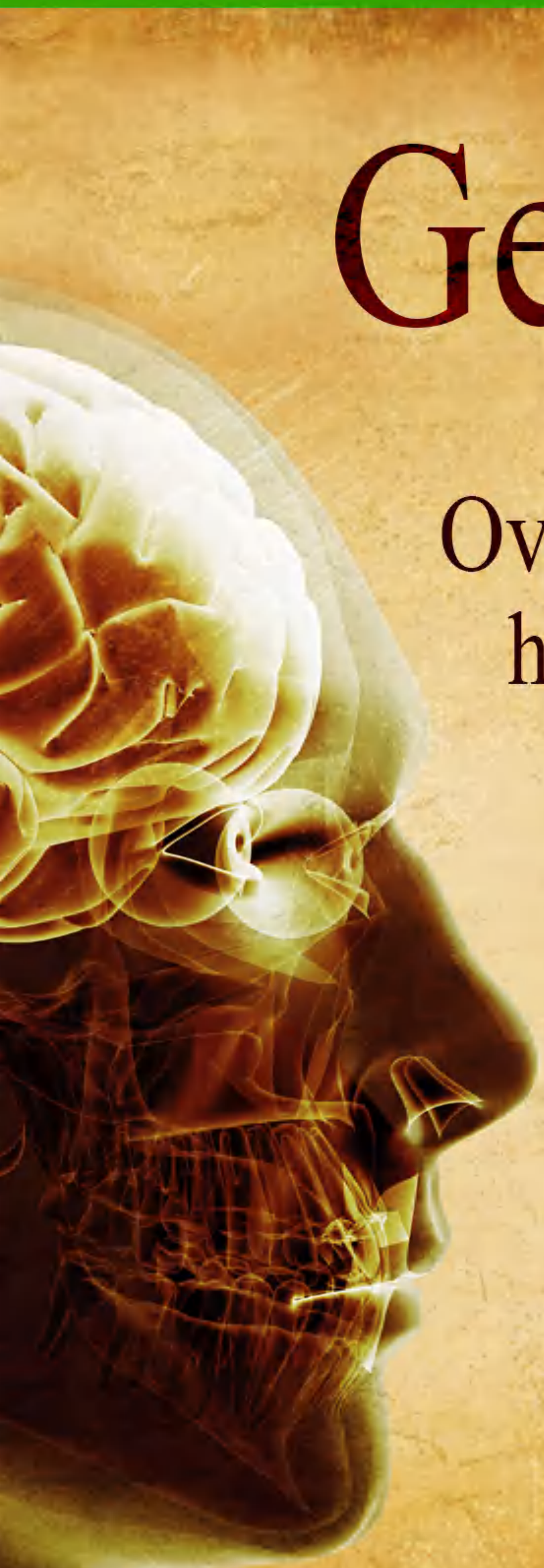
The news of the King's death had not then reached Canada.

partir que ie ne ſçauois ce que ie ſçay, i'euſſe employé le verd & le ſec ou i'en euſſe amené deux ou trois, & deux muids de bled qui eſt peu de chofe: Vous aſſeurant qu'il fait beau trafiquer par deçà & faire vn beau gain: Si vous voulez y entendre, mandez moy voſtre volonté par ce porteur qui deſire retourner & faire trafiq, ſuiuant ce qu'il a veu. Ie ne vous [6] en diray dauantage, ſinon que ie prieray Dieu Monſieur & frere vous donner en parfaicte ſanté tref-longue vie. De la nouuelle France, du Port Royal ce xxviij. Iuin, 1610.

Voſtre treſ-affectionné Frere & ſeruiteur

BERTRAND.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

CE. Par Marc Lescarbot. 1609.
P
A
R du Dauphin
Lacs
Auec Priuilege du Roy

1612.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[1] PREMIÈRE MISSION DES JÉSUITES AU CANADA.*

Lettre du P. Pierre Biard, au T. R. P. Claude Aquaviva, Général de la Compagnie de Jésus, à Rome.

(*Traduite sur l'original latin, conservé dans les Archives du Jésus, à Rome*).

DIEPPE, 21 janvier 1611.

MON TRÈS-RÉVÉREND PÈRE,
Pax Christi.

Que je voudrais pouvoir vous raconter combien grandes et nombreuses ont été, dans notre petite affaire, les miséricordes de Dieu et les fruits de sa bénédiction et des prières; c'est-à-dire comment

* Nous ajouterons aux lettres de nos premiers missionnaires au Canada un fragment d'un mémoire intitulé: *Monumenta Novæ Franciæ, ab anno* 1607, *ad annum* 1737.—*Insulæ Martinicæ ab anno* 1678.—*Insulæ Cayennensis ab anno* 1668.

La traduction du chapitre II de ce manuscrit, conservé dans nos archives de Rome, donnera un ensemble de faits sur la Nouvelle-[2] France, qui ne se trouve pas dans les lettres que nous publions.

Parmi les gentilshommes qui s'offrirent à Henri-le-Grand, d'heureuse mémoire, pour entreprendre la colonisation de la Nouvelle-France, était le sieur de Potrincourt. Le roi lui accorda tout ce qu'il demandait, mais en lui signifiant qu'il aurait à emmener avec lui des religieux pris dans notre Compagnie pour les employer, selon ses ordres, à procurer le salut des sauvages; que du reste la dépense de cette mission ne serait nullement à sa charge, mais que le Trésor royal y pourvoirait.

[1] FIRST MISSION OF THE JESUITS IN CANADA.* [26]

Letter from Father Pierre Biard,[27] to the Very Reverend Father Claude Aquaviva,[28] General of the Society of Jesus, Rome.

(Translated from the Latin original, preserved in the Archives of Jesus, at Rome.)

DIEPPE, January 21st, 1611.[29]

MY VERY REVEREND FATHER,

The peace of Christ be with you.

Would that I could recount how great and numerous have been the mercies of God, the fruits of his blessing and of our prayers in this our little enterprise; that is to say, how [2] we have emerged from

* We shall add to the letters of our first missionaries to Canada a fragment of a memoir entitled: *Records of New France, from the year 1607 to the year 1737.—Of the Island of Martinique from the year 1678.—Of the Island of Cayenne from the year 1668.*

The translation of chapter II. of this manuscript, preserved in our archives at Rome, will give a collection of facts about New [2] France, which are not found in the letters we publish.

Among the gentlemen who offered themselves to Henry the Great, of happy memory, to undertake the colonization of New France, was sieur de Potrincourt. The king granted him all that he asked, but at the same time gave him to understand that he must take with him some religious persons from our Society for the purpose of securing, according to his orders, the salvation of the savages; furthermore, that the expense of this mission would in no respect devolve upon him, but would be provided for from the royal Treasury.

[2] nous sommes sortis de difficultés graves et multipliées, et comment, délivrés de toute entrave, nous partons pour la Nouvelle-France, lieu de notre [3] des-

Le R. P. Pierre Coton, alors confesseur et prédicateur du roi, et qui était fort estimé de Sa Majesté, comme on sait, fut chargé par lui de choisir, dans sa Compagnie, des hommes capables, pour mener à bien cette périlleuse et sainte entreprise.

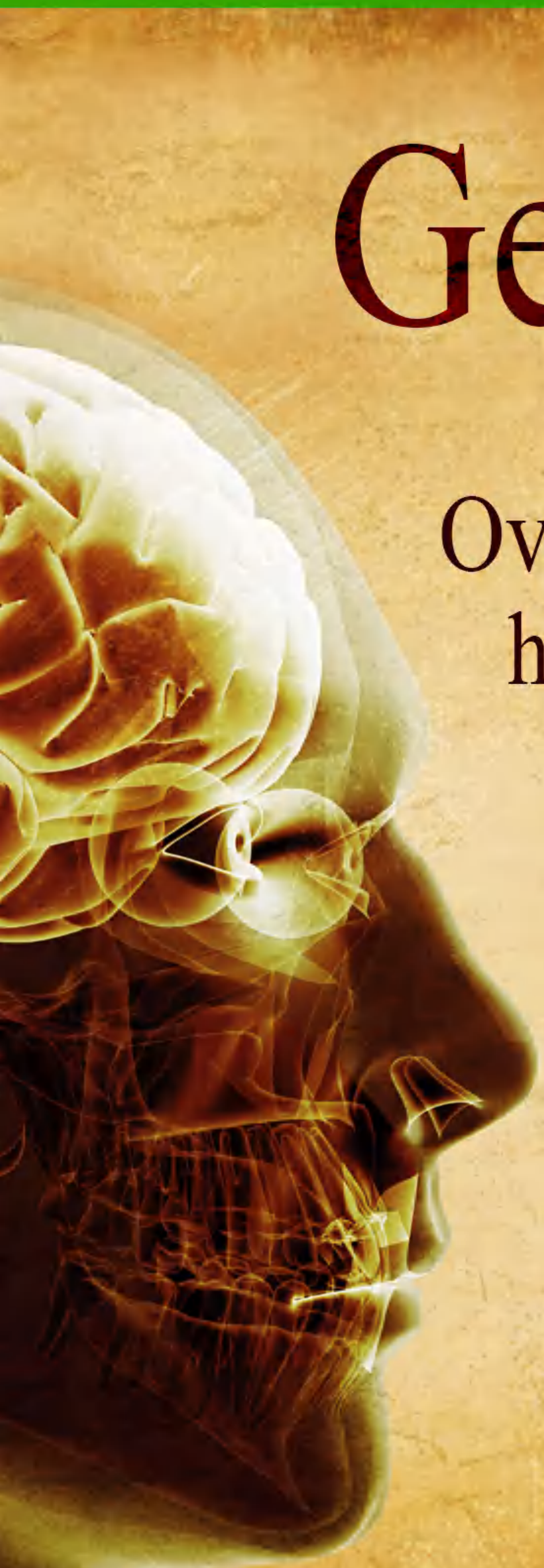
Beaucoup de nos religieux s'offrirent pour cette mission lointaine. Parmi eux on remarquait le P. Pierre Biard, homme dont la vertu égalait le talent, et qui occupait alors la chaire de théologie à Lyon. Le choix des supérieurs tomba sur lui et sur le P. Ennemond Masse, dont nous aurons à parler plus loin.

Ils partirent tous les deux en 1608 pour Bordeaux, où ils devaient s'embarquer, mais il fallut attendre trois ans. Car le gentilhomme, dont nous avons déjà parlé, retarda son départ; puis ensuite il prétexta la nécessité de faire un voyage d'essai, afin, disait-il, de préparer une habitation convenable pour les Pères. Il fit en effet ce voyage accompagné d'un prêtre séculier, lequel, se laissant aller à un zèle peu réfléchi, baptisa une centaine de sauvages, sans les avoir suffisamment instruits et éprouvés. Plus tard, on s'aperçut que ces pauvres gens n'avaient pas même compris ce qu'ils avaient reçu.

Trois ans après, de retour de son voyage, le sieur de Potrincourt, pressé par la reine-mère, se chargea de conduire nos Pères au [3] Canada. Mais ce ne fut pas sans grandes difficultés et beaucoup de souffrances que nos Pères arrivèrent au Port-Royal, sur les côtes de l'Acadie.

L'année qui suivit leur arrivée, deux autres des Nôtres allèrent les rejoindre: ce furent le P. Quentin et le Frère coadjuteur Gilbert du Thet. Deux ans de séjour à Port-Royal démontrèrent à nos Pères l'impossibilité de fixer là le centre de leur mission, soit à cause de la difficulté d'y attirer un grand concours de sauvages, soit à cause des tracasseries de ceux qui commandaient. Ils transportèrent le siége de leur mission sur un autre point de la même côte, au 45e degré 30 minutes de latitude, et cela sur un décret du roi. Cette fondation prit le nom de Saint-Sauveur. Ils y étaient établis depuis peu de temps, lorsque les anglais, survenant à l'improviste, s'emparèrent du vaisseau français, saisirent les lettres-patentes du commandant, et, par une insigne fourberie, le traitèrent de pirate. Au moment de l'attaque, plusieurs français furent tués, et parmi eux le frère Gilbert du Thet, homme remarquable par son courage et sa piété.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

tination, comme Votre Paternité le sait! Elle peut certainement s'en réjouir avec une grande consolation dans le Seigneur.

[4] Mais voici déjà minuit sonné, et à la première lueur du jour, nous mettons à la voile. Je vous donnerai seulement un précis des événements.

Quand les marchands hérétiques nous virent à Dieppe, au jour fixé pour le départ, le 27 octobre de

Les anglais victorieux, après avoir pillé tout à leur aise, abandonnèrent dans une mauvaise barque une partie de français, et emmenèrent avec eux, en Virginie, les PP. Biard et Quentin. Nos deux prisonniers s'attendaient à être condamnés à mort, surtout lorsque, reconduits à Port-Royal, ils refusèrent de faire connaître la retraite des français qui se tenaient cachés dans les environs. Dirigés une seconde fois sur la Virginie, ils y auraient probablement trouvé la mort, si la divine Providence n'eût rendu inutiles tous les efforts des marins anglais pour y aborder. La violence de la tempête les rejeta sur les îles Açores appartenant aux portugais, et où, malgré eux, ils furent obligés de prendre terre.

Les anglais eux-mêmes furent forcés d'admirer la loyauté et la [4] charité de nos Pères qui, en se montrant aux portugais, pouvaient amener la saisie du navire et faire condamner les anglais, comme pirates, au dernier supplice. Avant d'entrer dans le port, ils avaient exigé de leurs prisonniers la promesse de ne pas les dénoncer et de se tenir cachés durant tout leur séjour aux Açores. Pendant la visite du vaisseau faite par les portugais, les Pères restèrent à fond de cale, où ils échappèrent à tous les regards. Cette générosité et cette fidélité à garder la parole donnée surprirent tellement les anglais, qu'ils changèrent immédiatement de procédés envers leurs captifs et les emmenèrent directement en Angleterre, où ils firent publiquement leur éloge.

L'ambassadeur de France, à la nouvelle de leur arrivée, se hâta de les réclamer et les fit reconduire honorablement dans leur patrie, au mois de mai 1614.

Ce premier voyage de nos missionnaires, si stérile en apparence, eut cependant d'heureux résultats. Outre l'expérience acquise et dont on profita, le zèle des catholiques français, ranimé par les paroles des Pères, créa de nouvelles ressources, et dès que la colonie française fut délivrée des anglais, les Jésuites reprirent la route du Canada, où ils fondèrent enfin une des plus belles missions de la Compagnie.

knows. For this you may rejoice with great consolation in the name of the Lord.

[4] But it has already struck midnight, and we are to sail at break of day, so I shall give you only a summary of the events which have taken place.

When the heretic merchants saw us at Dieppe, upon the day fixed for our departure, the 27th of October of last year, 1610 (we had, in fact, agreed to

The victorious English, after having pillaged as much as they liked, abandoned part of the French in a miserable bark, and took with them to Virginia Fathers Biard and Quentin. Our two prisoners expected to be condemned to death, especially when, being taken back to Port Royal, they refused to make known the hiding-place of the French who were concealed in the neighborhood. Turning their course a second time toward Virginia, they would probably have met death there, had not divine Providence frustrated all the efforts of the English sailors to land. A violent storm cast them upon the Azores islands, which belong to Portugal; and there, in spite of all their efforts, they were obliged to disembark.

Even the English were forced to admire the loyalty and charity [4] of our Fathers, who, by showing themselves to the Portuguese, might have caused the seizure of the ship, and had the English condemned and executed as pirates. Before entering port they exacted from their prisoners the promise not to denounce them, and to keep themselves concealed during their entire sojourn at the Azores. While the Portuguese were visiting the ship, the Fathers remained in the bottom of the hold, where they escaped observation. This generosity and loyalty in keeping their word so surprised the English that they immediately changed their treatment of their captives, and took them directly to England, where they publicly eulogized them.

The French ambassador, on hearing of their arrival, hastened to reclaim them, and had them taken back honorably into their own country, in the month of May, 1614.

This first voyage of our missionaries, apparently so futile, had, however, fortunate results. Beside the experience acquired, of which good use was made, the zeal of French catholics, revived by the stories of the Fathers, created new resources; and as soon as the French colony was delivered from the English, the Jesuits resumed their voyages to Canada, where they finally founded one of the finest missions of the Society.—[Carayon.]

l'année dernière, 1610 (nous étions en effet convenus qu'on partirait de Dieppe), ils imaginèrent un moyen qu'ils crurent favorable pour nous nuire. Deux d'entre eux avaient fait un contrat avec M. de Potrincourt pour charger et équiper son navire, [5] sur lequel nous devions voyager. Ils déclarèrent aussitôt qu'ils ne voulaient plus s'occuper du vaisseau, s'il devait porter des Jésuites. C'était une insigne malice, et elle était facile à prouver, surtout quand les catholiques leur ajoutaient que le devoir ne leur permettait pas de refuser les Jésuites, puisque c'était l'ordre formel de la Reine.

On ne put cependant rien gagner sur eux. Il fallut avoir encore recours à la Reine. Sa Majesté écrit au gouverneur de la ville, catholique plein de zèle et de piété, et lui enjoint de signifier aux héretiques que c'est sa volonté que les Jésuites soient reçus dans le vaisseau qui va partir pour la Nouvelle-France, et qu'on n'y mette aucun obstacle.

A la réception de ces lettres, le gouverneur assemble ce qu'on appelle le consistoire, c'est-à-dire tous les fidèles disciples de Calvin. Il donne lecture des lettres de la Reine, et les invite à l'obéissance.— Quelques-uns, c'est-à-dire ceux qui étaient bons, disent hautement qu'ils sont eux aussi du même avis, et ils engagent les marchands à se soumettre; mais ils déclarent que pour eux ils ne sont maîtres de rien. Tel était leur langage en public; mais en particulier, un des marchands qui était chargé d'équiper le navire, protesta qu'il n'y mettrait rien; que la Reine, si elle le voulait, pouvait lui [6] ôter son droit, mais que pour lui, il ne le cèderait pas autrement.

Que faire? Certainement tout était arrêté; car cette société n'avait pas de contrat écrit, et ces sortes

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

d'engagements entre gens nobles ne se mettent pas ordinairement sur papier. On ne pouvait donc pas agir contre ces hérétiques.

On s'adresse de nouveau à la Reine. A la vue d'une pareille effronterie, elle dit en manière de proverbe: "Il ne faut s'abaisser à prier des vilains"; et elle ajouta que les Pères partiraient une autre fois.

Les catholiques consternés déclarent alors aux hérétiques que les Jésuites ne monteront pas dans ce vaisseau, qu'ils peuvent en conséquence le fréter, et que, dans tous les cas, si les Jésuites y prenaient place, ils payeraient auparavant eux-mêmes le prix de la cargaison.

Cette assurance une fois donnée, on vit à nu toute la malice des calvinistes; car ils chargèrent aussitôt le navire complétement et de marchandises et de toute espèce d'objets, ne pouvant s'imaginer que les catholiques pussent jamais trouver de quoi payer le prix de tant de choses.

A cette nouvelle, Madame la marquise de Guercheville, première dame d'honneur de la Reine, [7] s'indigna de voir les efforts de l'enfer prévaloir et la malice des hommes pervers détruire ces grandes espérances que l'on avait de procurer la gloire de Dieu. C'est pourquoi, afin que Satan ne demeurât pas le maître et ne renversât pas l'espoir que l'on avait de fonder une église au Canada, elle sollicita elle-même les aumônes des Grands, des Princes et de toute la Cour pour soustraire les Jésuites à la méchanceté des hérétiques.

Qu'arriva-t-il? Le navire déjà chargé était prêt à prendre la mer, quand cette dame envoya aux catholiques 4,000 livres avec d'autres secours. Alors, pour ne pas agir par surprise, ils vont dire adroite-

were at a standstill; for this society had no written contract, since agreements of this kind among noblemen are not usually put upon paper. Therefore they could not prosecute these heretics.

They address themselves anew to the Queen. In the presence of such effrontery she quoted the words of the proverb: "Never stoop to entreat a churl," and added that the Fathers should go another time.

The dismayed catholics then declare to the heretics that the Jesuits will not embark upon their vessel, and that consequently they may go on freighting it; and that, in any event, if the Jesuits did occupy a place therein, they themselves would first pay the price of the cargo.

This assurance once given, the malice of these calvinists was exposed in all its nakedness; for they immediately loaded every part of the ship not only with merchandise, but with all kinds of goods, never dreaming that the catholics would be able to find the means of paying for all these things.

At this news, the marchioness de Guercheville, first lady of honor to the Queen, [7] was indignant at seeing the forces of hell prevail, and the malice of wicked men destroy one's strong hopes of securing the glory of God.[83] Therefore, in order to prevent the triumph of Satan and the overthrow of their hopes of founding a church in Canada, she herself solicited alms from Nobles, Princes, and from all the Court, to rescue the Jesuits from the malevolence of the heretics.

What happened? The ship, already loaded, was about to sail, when this lady sent to the catholics 4,000 livres, with other means of assistance. Then, not to be underhand, they go directly to the heretics and say that they want the Jesuits to go with them,

ment aux hérétiques qu'ils veulent avoir avec eux les Jésuites, que telle est la volonté de la Reine, et que, par conséquent, il faut qu'ils les laissent monter dans le vaisseau, ou bien que les marchands acceptent le prix de la cargaison et qu'ils se retirent. Ceux-ci déclarent qu'ils veulent le prix de leurs marchandises (Je crois qu'ils ne pensaient pas que les catholiques eussent assez d'argent, ou qu'ils espéraient trouver quelque autre moyen de déjouer leurs projets). On leur donne le prix demandé, et ce à quoi personne ne se serait attendu, nous sommes si pleinement substitués à leur place, que la moitié du bâtiment nous appartient, et que nous avons déjà ce qu'il faut pour commencer [8] cette fondation que le Seigneur daignera bénir dans sa générosité et dans sa bonté.

Ainsi donc, mon Très-Révérend et bon Père, Votre Paternité voit combien la malice du démon et de ses suppôts a tourné à notre avantage. Nous ne demandions d'abord qu'un petit coin dans ce vaisseau, et à prix d'argent; maintenant nous y sommes les maîtres. Nous allions dans une région déserte, sans grande espérance d'un secours de longue durée, et nous recevons déjà le commencement de la fondation. Nous étions forcés d'enrichir les hérétiques d'une partie de nos aumônes, et maintenant ils renoncent d'eux-mêmes à profiter d'une occasion qui les devait enrichir.

Mais je crois que le grand sujet de leur douleur, c'est précisément le triomphe du Seigneur Jésus; et fasse le ciel qu'il triomphe toujours! Ainsi soit-il!

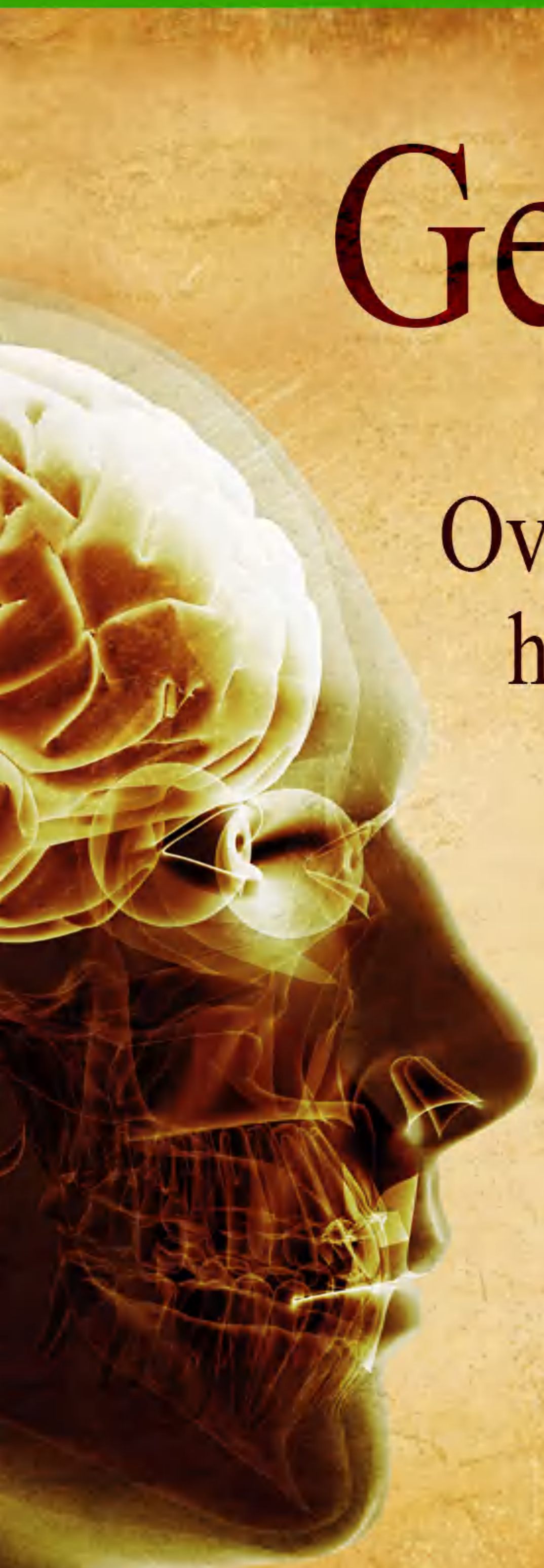
Dieppe, le 21 janvier 1611.

De Votre Paternité

Le fils en Jésus-Christ et le serviteur indigne,

PIERRE BIARD S.J.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[9] Lettre du P. Biard, au R. P. Christophe Baltazar, Provincial de France a Paris.

(Copiée sur l'autographe conservé aux Archives du Jésus à Rome.)

Mon Reverend Pere,

Pax Christi.

Enfin, par la grace et faveur de Dieu, nous voicy arrivez à Port-Royal, lieu tant désiré, et après avoir paty et surmonté, pendant l'espace de sept mois, force contradictions et traverses, que nous susciterent à Dieppe quelques-uns de la pretendue religion, et sur mer, les fatigues, orages et tourmentes de l'hyver, des vents et des tempestes. Par la misericorde de Dieu et par les prieres de Vostre Reverence et de nos bons Peres et Freres, nous voicy au bout de nostre course, et au lieu tant souhaité Voicy aussi la premiere commodité qui se presente pour escrire à Vostre Reverence, et lui faire sçavoir de nos nouvelles et de l'estat auquel nous nous retrouvons. Je suis marry que le peu de temps de nostre arrivée en ce pays ne me permette pas d'en discourir, et comme je désirerois [10] plus amplement, et de l'estat de cette pauvre nation; neantmoins je m'efforceray de vous descrire non-seulement ce qui s'est passé en nostre voyage, mais aussy tout ce qu'avons peu apprendre de ce peuple depuis que nous y sommes, selon que, je penſe, tous nos bons seigneurs et amis avec Vostre Reverence (doivent) l'attendre et le desirer.

[9] Letter from Father Biard, to Reverend Father Christopher Baltazar, Provincial of France, at Paris.

(Copied from the autograph preserved in the Archives of Jesus, at Rome).

MY REVEREND FATHER,

The peace of Christ be with you.

At last by the grace and favor of God, here we are at Port Royal, the place so greatly desired, after having suffered and overcome, during the space of seven months, a multitude of trials and difficulties raised up against us at Dieppe by those belonging to the pretended religion; and after having survived at sea the fatigues, storms, and discomforts of winter, winds, and tempests. By the mercy of God, and through the prayers of Your Reverence and of our good Fathers and Brothers, here we are at the end of our journey and in the long-wished-for place. And I am now taking the first opportunity which presents itself to write to Your Reverence, and to communicate to you news of ourselves and of our present situation. I am sorry that the short time we have been in this country does not permit me to write about it at length, as I was desirous [10] of doing, and about the condition of these poor people; however, I will try to describe to you not only what happened in our voyage, but also all that we have been able to learn of these peoples since our arrival, as I believe all our good noblemen and friends, as well as Your Reverence, expect and desire me to do.

Et, pour commencer par le préparatif de nostre voyage, Vostre Reverence aura sceu l'effort que firent deux marchants de Dieppe de la religion pretendue, qui avoient charge de fretter le navire, pour empescher que n'y fussions reçus. Il y avoit jà quelques années que ceux qui avoient commencé et continué le voyage de Canada, avoient desiré quelques uns de nostre Compagnie pour s'employer à la conversion de ce peuple là; et le feu Roy d'heureuse memoire Henry le Grand avoit assigné cinq cents escus pour le voyage des premiers qui y seroient envoyés, quand le R. P. Enmond Masse et moy, deputés pour ce voyage, après avoir salué la Reyne Regente, entendu de sa propre bouche le saint zele qu'elle avoit de la conversion de ces peuples barbares, reçu les susdicts cinq cents escus pour nostre viatique, aydés aussi de la pieuse libéralité de Mesdames les Marquises de Guercheville, Verneuil et de Sourdis, partis de Paris, arrivasmes à Dieppe au jour que nous avait assigné [11] Monsieur de Biancourt, fils de Monsieur de Potrincourt, pour nous y prendre, sçavoir le 27 d'Octobre 1610.

Les deux susdicts marchants, aussitost qu'ils ouïrent que deux Iesuites debvoient aller au Canada, s'adresserent à Monsieur de Biancourt[1] et luy denoncerent que si lesdicts Iesuites entroient au navire, ils n'y vouloient rien avoir. On leur respondit que la venuë des Iesuites ne leur nuyroit en rien; que, Dieu mercy et la Reyne, ils avoient moyen de payer leur pension sans grever aucunement leur fret. Ils per-

[1] Charles de Biencourt, écuyer, sieur de Saint-Just et fils de M. de Poutrincourt. Il était alors âgé de dix-neuf ou vingt ans. (*Lescarbot* et *Champlain*.)

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

sistent toute fois en leur negative; et quoyque Monsieur de Sicoine, gouverneur de la ville, fort zelé catholique, s'en entremeslast de bonne affection, si ne pût-il rien obtenir d'eux. A cette cause, Monsieur Robbin[2], le fils, autrement de Cologne, associé avec Monsieur de Biancourt pour le voyage, se delibera d'aller en Cour et déclarer à la Reyne cet accrochement; ce qu'il fit. La Reyne sur cela donna lettres addressantes à Monsieur de Sicoigne, à ce qu'il eust à declarer la volonté du Roy à present regnant, être telle, et avoir pareillement [12] esté telle celle du feu Roy d'eternelle memoire, que lesdicts Iesuites allent en Canada; et par ainsy entendissent les contrariants sur ce fait, qu'ils se trouveroient en opposition contre le bon plaisir de leur Prince. Les lettres estoient fort affectueuses; et plût à Monsieur de Sicoigne de mander à soy tout le consistoire, et leur en faire lecture. Si est-ce que pour tout cela, les marchants sus mentionnés ne voulurent en rien démordre; seulement fut accordé que, laissant à part la question des Iésuites, on chargeroit promptement le vaisseau, de peur que cet embarras et dispute n'apportast du retardement au secours qui promptement debvoit estre donné à Monsieur de Potrincourt.

Lors je pensois bien quasi toutes nos attentes estre mises au rouët, et ne sçavois quelle clef nous en pourroit assez desgager. Mais Monsieur de Cologne ne desespera point; ains, se montrant de sa grâce toujours plus ardent à poursuivre pour nous, fit entendre en Cour, par un second voyage qu'il fit, y avoir bien moyen de debouter les susdits marchants,

[2] Thomas Robin, écuyer, sieur de Cologne, demeurant en la ville de Paris. (*Lescarbot.*)

to pay their passage without in the least disturbing their cargo. They still persisted, however, in their refusal; and although Monsieur de Sicoine, governor of the city, a very zealous catholic, kindly interposed, he could gain nothing from them. For this reason, Monsieur Robbin,† his son, otherwise called de Coloigne,[37] a partner of Monsieur de Biancourt in this voyage, thought he would go to Court and make known this difficulty to the Queen; he did so. The Queen, thereupon, sent letters addressed to Monsieur de Sicoigne, telling him to announce that the will of the present King, as well as [12] that of the late King of eternal memory, was that these Jesuits should go to Canada; and that those who were opposing their departure were doing so against the will of their Prince. The letters were very kind: and Monsieur de Sicoigne was pleased to assemble the consistory, and read them to that body. Notwithstanding all this, the merchants would not yield in the least; it was merely granted that, leaving the Jesuits out of the question, they should promptly load their ship, lest these perplexities and disputes should cause some delay in bringing the succor to Monsieur de Potrincourt, which must be given promptly. Then I almost made up my mind that all our hopes were doomed to disappointment, for I did not see how we were to be extricated from these difficulties. Monsieur de Coloigne did not despair; but, showing himself in his kindness always more eager to pursue the case for us, by a second journey he convinced the Court of an excellent plan for thwarting the merchants; namely, by paying them for their cargo, and

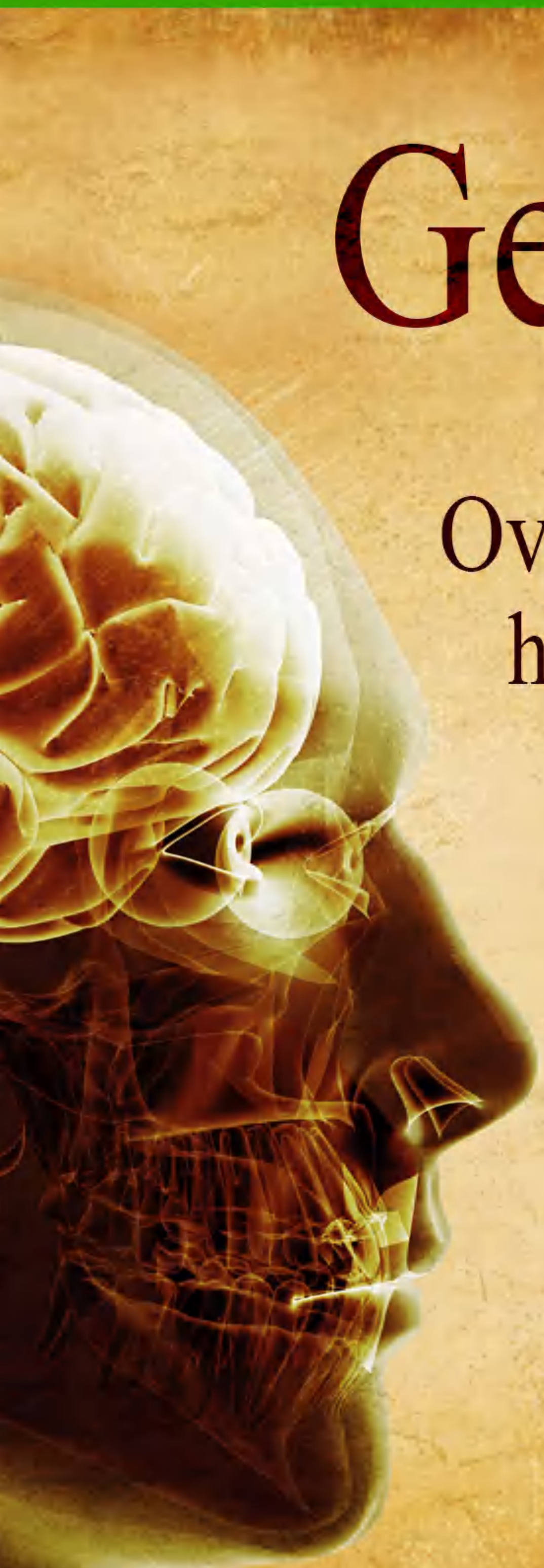
† Thomas Robin, esquire, sieur de Cologne, living in the city of Paris. (*Lescarbot.*)—[Carayon.]

sçavoir est, en leur payant leur marchandise, et ainsi les dédommageant. Madame de la Guercheville, dame de grande vertu, recognoissant cet expédient, et jugeant n'estre convenable à la piété de la cour que pour si peu un œuvre de Dieu fust arresté, et satan en eust ainsi le [13] dessus, se délibera de faire un queste pour mettre ensemble la somme de deniers requise, et le fist avec telle diligence et si heureusement, par la pieuse liberalité de plusieurs des Seigneurs et Dames de la cour, qu'elle assembla bientost quatre mil livres, et les envoya à Dieppe. Ainsy lesdits marchants furent exclus de tout le droict qu'ils eussent pû avoir sur le vaisseau, sans rien perdre, et nous y fusmes introduits.

Cet affaire et plusieurs autres qui survinrent dans l'aprest de nostre voyage, furent cause que ne pusmes partir de Dieppe avant le 26 janvier 1611. Monsieur de Biancourt, jeune seigneur fort accomply et expert en la maryne, estoit nostre conducteur, et chef du vaisseau. Nous estions 36 personnes dans un navire appelé *la Grace de Dieu*, d'environ soixante tonneaux. Nous n'eusmes que deux jours de bon vent; au troisiesme, nous nous vismes subitement, par un vent et marées contraires, emportés jusques à cent ou deux cents pas des esquillons l'isle d'Wytht, en Angleterre; et bien nous en print que nous y rencontrasmes bon ancrage; sans cela resoluement c'estoit faict de nous.

Eschappés de là, nous relaschasmes à Hyrmice et depuis à Niéport; en quoy nous consumasmes 18 jours. Le 16 de février, premier jour de caresme, [14] un bon norouest s'elevant, nous donna moyen de partir, et nous accompagna jusques hors de la Manche.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ors ont accoustumé les mariniers, venant à Port-Royal, de ne point prendre la droite route des isles Ouessants jusqu'au Cap de Sable, ce qui abregeroit beaucoup le chemin; car en cette façon, de Dieppe à Port-Royal, n'y auroit qu'environ mil lieues; ains leur coustume est de descendre vers le Sud jusqu'aux Açores, et de là tirer au grand banc, pour du grand banc, selon que les vents se présentent, viser au Cap de Sable, ou bien à Campseaux, ou bien autre part. Ils m'ont dict que pour trois raisons ils descendent ainsi aux Açores: la premiere pour esviter la mer du nort, qui est fort haute, disent-ils; la seconde, pour s'ayder des vents du sud, qui volontiers reignent le plus; la troisiesme, pour assurer leur estime: autrement il est difficile qu'ils se recognoissent et dressent leur voyage sans erreur. Mais nulle de ces causes a eu effet quant à nous, qui neantmoins avons suivy cette coustume: non la premiere, parce que nous avons experimenté tant de tempestes et la mer si rude, que je ne pense pas y avoir beaucoup de gain, nort ou sud, sud ou nort; non la seconde, parce que souvent, quand nous voulions le Sud, le Nort souffloit, et à retours; non enfin la troisiesme, d'autant que nous ne pusmes point voir ces Açores, quoyque nous fussions [15] descendus jusqu'à 39 degrés et demy. Ainsi toute l'estime de nos conducteurs s'embrouilla, et nous n'estions pas encore aux Açores du grand banc, quand quelques-uns opinoient que nous l'eussions desjà passé.

Le grand banc aux molües n'est pas, comme j'estimois en France, quelque banc de sablon ou terre qui apparoisse hors de la mer, ains est une grande lisiere de terre soubs l'eau à 35, 40 et 45 brasses, large en quelques endroits de 25 lieuës. On l'appelle banc, parce que c'est là premierement où venant des

tomed to take the direct route from the Ouessant islands to Cape Sable, which would lessen the distance, for in this way, from Dieppe to Port Royal, there would only be about one thousand leagues; but they are in the habit of going South as far as the Azores, and from there to the great bank, thence, according to the winds, to strike for Cape Sable, or Campseaux, or elsewhere. They have told me that they go by way of the Azores for three reasons: first, in order to avoid the north sea, which is very stormy, they say; second, to make use of the south winds, which usually prevail there; third, to be sure of their reckonings; for otherwise it is difficult to take their bearings and arrange their route without error. But none of these causes affected us, although we followed this custom. Not the first, for we were so tossed about by tempests and high seas, that I do not think we gained much by going north or south, south or north; nor the second, because often when we wanted the South, the North wind blew, and vice versa; and certainly not the third, inasmuch as we could not even see the Azores, although we went [15] down as far as 39° 30′. Thus all the calculations of our leaders were confounded, and we had not yet reached the Azores of the great bank when some of them thought we had passed it.[38]

The great codfish bank is not, as I thought in France, a kind of sand or mud-bank, appearing above the surface of the sea; but is a great sub-marine plateau 35, 40 and 45 fathoms deep, and in some places twenty-five leagues in extent. They call it bank, because, in coming from the deep sea, it is the first place where bottom is found with the sounding lead. Now upon the border of this great bank, for the space of three or four leagues, the waves are generally

abismes de l'ocean, l'on trouve terre avec la sonde. Or, sur le bord de ce grand banc, les vagues sont d'ordinaire fort furieuses trois ou quatre lieues durant, et ces trois ou quatre lieues on appelle les Açores.

Nous estions environ ces Açores le mardy de Pasques, quand nous voicy en prouë notre ennemy conjuré, l'Ouest, avec telle furie et opiniastreté, que peu s'en fallut que nous ne perissions. De huict jours entiers, il ne nous donna relasche, adjoustant à sa malice le froid et souvent la pluie ou la neige.

Naviger en ce traject de la Nouvelle-France, si dangereux et si aspre, principalement en petits vaisseaux et mal munitionnez, est un sommaire de toutes les miseres de la vie Nous n'avions repos ni [16] jour ni nuict. Si nous pensions prendre nostre refection, nostre plat subitement eschappoit contre la tête de quelqu'un ; un autre tomboit sour nous, et nous contre quelque coffre, et tourneboulions avec d'autres pareillement renversez; nostre tasse se versoit sur nostre lict, et le bidon dans nostre seing, ou bien un coup de mer mandoit nostre plat.

Monsieur de Biancourt m'honoroit de tant, que je couchois dans sa chambre. Une belle nuict ainsy qu'estant au lict nous pensions prendre quelque repos, voicy qu'un gentil et hardy coup de mer qui faussa les fermetures de la fenestre, la rompt et nous vient couvrir bien hautement; autant en eusmes nous une autre fois de jour. En outre, le froid estoit si violent, et l'a esté plus de six semaines durant, qu'à peine nous sentions nous d'engourdissement et de gel. Le bon Père Masse a pati beaucoup. Il a demeuré quelques quarante jours malade sans manger que bien peu, et quasi sans bouger du lict; encore vouloit-il

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

jeusner avec tout cela. Après Pasque, il meliora tousjours, Dieu mercy de plus en plus. Pour moy, j'estois gaillard, quand mesme plusieurs des matelots se rendoient, et la Dieu grâce, je n'ay jamais tenu le lict pour mal que j'eusse.

Eschappés des tourmentes, nous entrasmes dans les glaces sur les Açores du banc, degrez du nort 46. Aucunes des glaces sembloient des isles, autres [17] des petits bourgs, autres des grandes églises ou dômes bien haults, ou superbes chasteaux: toutes flottoient. Pour les esviter, nous prismes au sud; mais ce fut tomber, comme l'on dict, de Charybdis en Sylla, car de ces haults rochers, nous tombasmes en un pavé de basse glace, la mer en estant toute couverte autant que la vue pouvoit porter. Nous ne savions en passer; et n'eust esté la hardiesse de M. de Biancourt, nos mariniers demeuroient sans expedient; mais il fit passer outre, non obstant le murmure de plusieurs, par où la glace estoit plus rare, et Dieu, par sa bonté, nous assista.

Le 5 de may, nous descendismes à Campceau, et eusmes le moyen d'y celebrer la sainte messe après tant de temps, et nous sustenter de ce pain qui nourit sans deffaut, et console sans fin. Depuis, nous costoyames terre jusqu'à Port-Royal, et y sommes arrivés à bons et heureux auspices le saint jour de Pencoste de bon matin, sçavoir est le 22 de may[1], jour auquel le soleil entre dans les Iumeaux. Nostre voyage avoit duré quatre mois.

Il n'est possible d'exprimer l'ayse que reçurent de nostre arrivée Monsieur de Potrincourt et les siens, lesquels, durant tout cet hyver, se trouvèrent [18] en

[1] Champlain et Charlevoix, qui l'a copié, mettent à tort le 12 de juin.

stay in bed even when several of the sailors had to give up.

After escaping from these trials, we entered the ice at the Azores of the bank, 46 degrees north latitude. Some of these masses of ice seemed like islands, others [17] little villages, others grand churches or lofty domes, or magnificent castles: all were floating. To avoid them we steered towards the south; but this was falling, as they say, from Charybdis into Scylla, for from these high rocks we fell into a level field of low ice, with which the sea was entirely covered, as far as the eye could reach. We did not know how to steer through it; and had it not been for the fearlessness of Monsieur de Biancourt, our sailors would have been helpless; but he guided us out, notwithstanding the protests of many of them, through a place where the ice was more scattered, and God, in his goodness, assisted us.

On the 5th of May, we disembarked at Campceau,[40] and there had the opportunity of celebrating holy mass after so long a time, and of strengthening ourselves with that bread which never fails to nourish and console. Then we coasted along until we reached Port Royal, where we arrived under good and happy auspices early in the morning[41] of the holy day of Pentecost, the 22nd of May,* the day upon which the sun enters the constellation Gemini. Our voyage had lasted four months.

The joy of Monsieur de Potrincourt and his followers, at our arrival, is indescribable. They had been, during the entire winter, reduced [18] to sore straits, as I am going to explain to you.

* Champlain and Charlevoix, who copied this, were wrong in saying the 12th of June.—[Carayon.]

de très-grandes necessités, comme je vous vais declarer.

Monsieur de Potrincourt avoit accompagné son fils revenant en France sur la fin de juillet 1610, et y estoit venu jusques au port Saint Iean[1], autrement dict Chachippé, distant du Port-Royal 70 lieuës est et sud. Revenant et ayant redoublé le Cap de Sable, se trouvant en la baye courante, accablé de fatigues, il fut contraint de ceder le gouvernail pour un peu dormir, donnant mandement à celuy qui succedoit de suivre toujours terre, jusqu'au plus profond de la Baye. Ce successeur, ne sçay pourquoy, ne suyvit pas le commandement, ains peu de temps après changea, et abandonna terre.

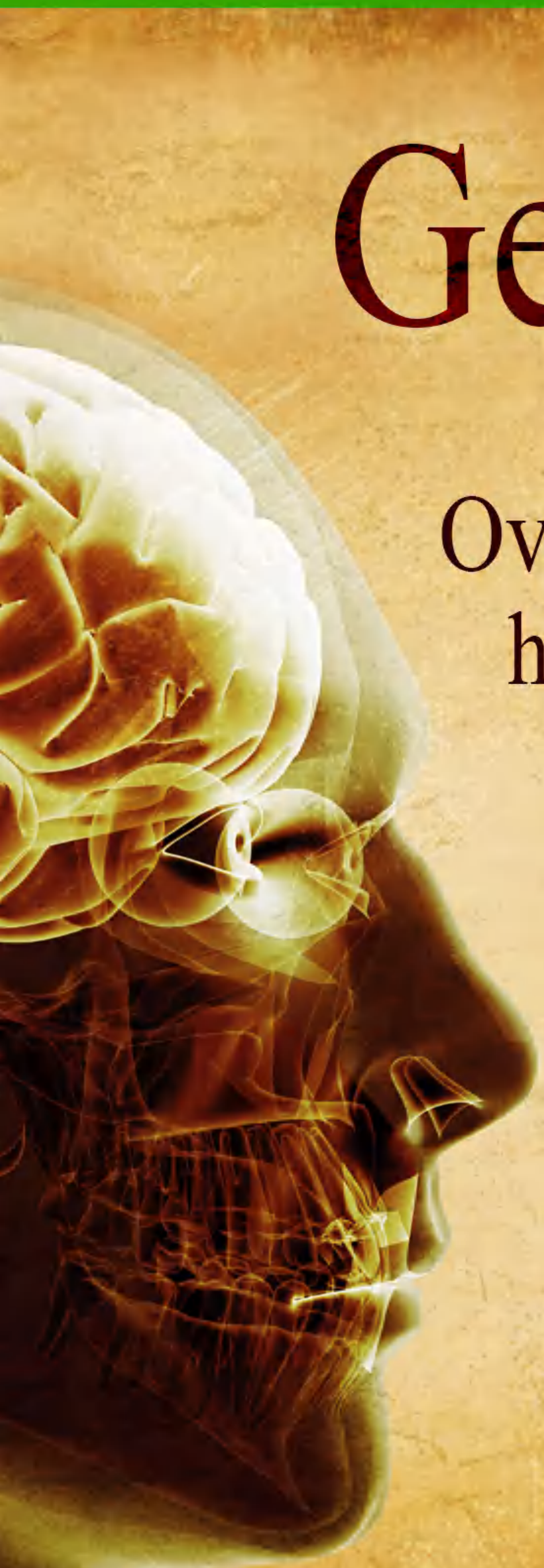
Le Sauvage Membertou, qui suyvoit dans sa chaloupe, fut estonné de cette route; néanmoins, n'en sçachant pas la cause, n'en imita pas l'exemple, et si n'en dit rien. Aussi arriva-t-il bientost à Port-Royal, là où M. de Potrincour erra par six semaines en danger de se perdre; car le bon seigneur, s'estant esveillé, fut bien esbahy de se veoir en pleine mer, à perte de terre, dans une chaloupe. Il avait beau regarder son cadran, car ne sçachant [19] quelle route son gentil gouverneur avoit tenué, il ne pouvoit deviner ni où il estoit, ni où il convenoit addresser. Un autre mal, sa chaloupe ne pouvoit aller à la boline[2], ayant esté, ne scay comment, brisée par les flancs. Ainsi, voulust-il ou non, il estoit necessité à prendre toujours vent derriere.

Un tiers inconvenient et grief: ils n'avoient de

[1] Lescarbot dit: « Son père le conduisit jusque au port de la Hève, à cent lieues loin, ou environ du Port-Royal.» Ce qui donnerait à entendre que Chachippè, Port Saint-Jean et la Hève sont une même chose.

[2] Aller à la bouline, c'est-à-dire tenir le plus près du vent.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

vivres. Néantmoins, c'est une homme qui ne se rend pas facilement, et bonheur l'accompagne. Donc, en cette perplexité de route, il se determina heureusement de prendre au nord, et Dieu lui envoya ce qu'il souhaitoit, un favorable Sud. Contre le mal de la faim, sa prudence luy servit; car il avoit chassé et gardé certain nombre de cormorans.[2] Mais quel moyen de les rôtir en une chaloupe, pour les manger et garder? De bonne fortune, il se trouva avoir quelque planche, sur laquelle il dressa un foyer, et ainsi rotit son gibier, à l'ayde duquel il arriva à Pentegouët, anciennement la Norembegue, et de là aux Etechemins, puis à l'embouscheure du Port-Royal, où, par desastre, il pensa faire naufrage.

Il faisoit obscur quand il se trouva en cette entrée, et ses gens commencerent à lui, contredire, [20] niant assurément que ce fust l'embouscheure du Port-Royal. Luy ouït volontiers les opinions de ses gens, et malheur qu'encore les suyvit-il, et aynsi prenant en bas de la Baye Françoise, il s'en alla roder bien loing à la mercy des vents et des marées. Cependant ses gens estoient bien en peine au Port-Royal, et jà quasi tenoient-ils pour tout assuré qu'il fust peri; à cela aydoit le sauvage Membertou, qui affirmoit luy avoir veu prendre vers la mer à perte de vuë; d'où l'on inferoit, comme l'on croit autant facilement ce que l'on craint comme ce que l'on ayme, que puisque tels ou tels vents avoient régné, il estoit impossible qu'avec une chaloupe, il eust peu eschapper. Et jà traitoit-on du retour en France. Or bien esbahis, et ensemble bien joyeux furent-ils, quand ils virent leur Thésée, revenu de l'autre monde; ce fut

[2] Le *cormoran* est un oiseau de mer, qui a le cou fort long, les pattes très-hautes, et qui vit de poisson.

give up, and good luck follows him. Now in this perplexity about the route, he fortunately decided to turn to the north, and God sent him what he desired, a favorable South wind. His thrift served him against the misfortune of hunger, for he had hunted and kept a certain number of cormorants.† But how could they be roasted in a small boat, so as to be eaten and kept? Fortunately he found he had a few planks, upon which he built a fire-place, and thus roasted the game; by the aid of which he arrived at Pentegouët, formerly Norembegue, and from there to the Etechemins, thence to the harbor of Port Royal, where by a piece of ill luck, he was nearly shipwrecked.

It was dark when he entered this harbor, and his crew began to oppose him, stoutly denying [20] that they were in the harbor of Port Royal. He was willing to listen to their objections, and unfortunately even yielded to them; and so turning to the lower part of French Bay, he went wandering away off at the mercy of the winds and waves. Meanwhile the colonists of Port Royal were in great anxiety, and had already nearly made up their minds that he was lost; the savage, Membertou, strengthened this fear by asserting that he had seen him sail out of sight upon the sea; whence it was inferred, since people believe as easily what they fear as what they favor, that as such and such a wind had prevailed, it was impossible for them to escape in such a boat. And they were already planning their return to France. Now they were greatly astonished, and at the same time exceedingly happy when they saw their Theseus return from another world; this was six weeks after his departure,

† The *cormorant* is a long-necked, high-stepping sea-bird, which lives upon fish.—[Carayon.]

six semaines après son depart, au même temps que M. de Biancourt arrivoit en France, le retour duquel estoit attendu à Port-Royal pour tout Novembre de la même annèe 1610. Mais on fut bien estonné, quand non seulement on ne le vit pas à Noël, mais aussi on perdit espérance, à cause de l'hiver, de le revoir avant la fin d'apvril ensuivant.

Cette fut raison pour quoy on se retrancha de vivres; mais ce retranchement profitoit peu, d'autant que le Sieur de Potrincourt ne rabattoit rien [21] de ses libéralités vers les Sauvages, craingnant les aliener de la foy chrestienne. C'est un seigneur vraiment liberal et magnanime, mesprisant toute recompense des biens qu'il leur fait; de maniere que les Sauvages, quand par fois on leur demande pourquoy ils ne lui redonnent quelque chose pour tant de biens qu'il leur faict, ont de coustumes de respondre malitieusement: *Endries ninan metaij Sagamo:* c'est-à-dire, Monsieur ne se soucie point de nos peaux de castor. Néantmoins ils envoyoient par fois quelques pieces d'orignac, qui aydoyent à toujours gagner le temps. Or, bon moyen pour espargner, voicy que, l'hyver venu, leur moulin se glace, et n'y avoit moyen de faire farine. Bon pour eux, qu'ils trouverent provision de pois et febves; cette fut leur manne et ambroisie sept semaines durant.

Là estoit venu Apvril, mais non pas le navire, et lors le moulin eut beau se glacer, car aussi bien n'y avoit-il rien pour la tremye. Que fera-on? la faim est un meschant mal. On se met à pescher sur eau, et fouiller soubs terre: sur eau, on eut des esplans et du harang; soubs terre, on trouva de fort bonnes racines, qu'on appelle *chiqueli*, et abondent fort en de certains endroits.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ainsi contentoit-on aucunement cet importun crediteur; je dis aucunement parce que, le pain leur [22] manquant, toute autre chose leur estoit peu, et jà faisoit-on estat que, si le navire ne venoit pour tout le mois de may, que l'on se mettroit par la coste en recherche de quelques navires, pour repasser au doux pays de froment et vignoble. C'estoyent les gens de Monsieur de Potrincourt qui parloient ainsi; car pour luy, il avoit le courage, et si sçavoit bien les moyens de faire attendre jusques à la saint Iean. Il n'en fut pas de besoing, Dieu mercy, car comme dict est, nous arrivasmes le 22 de may. Or si, à cette venue, l'allegresse de Monsieur de Potrincourt et de ceux de l'habitation fut grande, ceux là le pourront conjecturer, qui sçavent ce que c'est de la faim, du desespoir, de la crainte, de patir, d'estre pere, et veoir ses entreprises et travaux à volleau.

Nous pleurasmes tous au rencontre, et nous estimions quasi songer; puis, quand nous fusmes un peu revenus et entrez en propos, cette question fut mise en avant, sçavoir: mon (de vrai) qui estoit le plus ayse des deux, ou M. de Potrincourt et les siens, ou M. de Biancourt et nous. De vray, nous avions bien tous le cœur bien eslargy, et Dieu, par sa misericorde, donna signe d'y prendre plaisir; car, après la messe et le disner, comme ce ne fusse qu'allée et venue du navire à l'habitation et de l'habitation au [23] navire, chacun voulant caresser, et estre caressé de ses amis, comme après l'hyver on se resjouït du beau temps, et après le siége de la liberté, il arriva que deux de l'habitation prindrent un canot des sauvages pour aller au navire. Ces canots sont tellement faits que, si on ne s'y tient pas bien juste et à plomb, aussitost

Thus this importunate creditor was somewhat satisfied; I say somewhat, because, when there was no bread, [22] everything else was of little account; and they had already made up their minds that, if the ship did not come during the month of May, they would resort to the coast, in search of ships to take them back to the sweet land of wheat and vines. It was Monsieur de Potrincourt's followers who talked this way; as for him, he was full of courage and knew well how he could manage to hold out until saint John's day [midsummer]. Thank God, there was no need of this, for, as has been said, we arrived the 22nd of May. Those who know what hunger, despair, fear and suffering are, what it is to be a leader and see all one's enterprises and hard work come to nought, can imagine what must have been the joy of Monsieur de Potrincourt and his colony upon seeing us arrive.

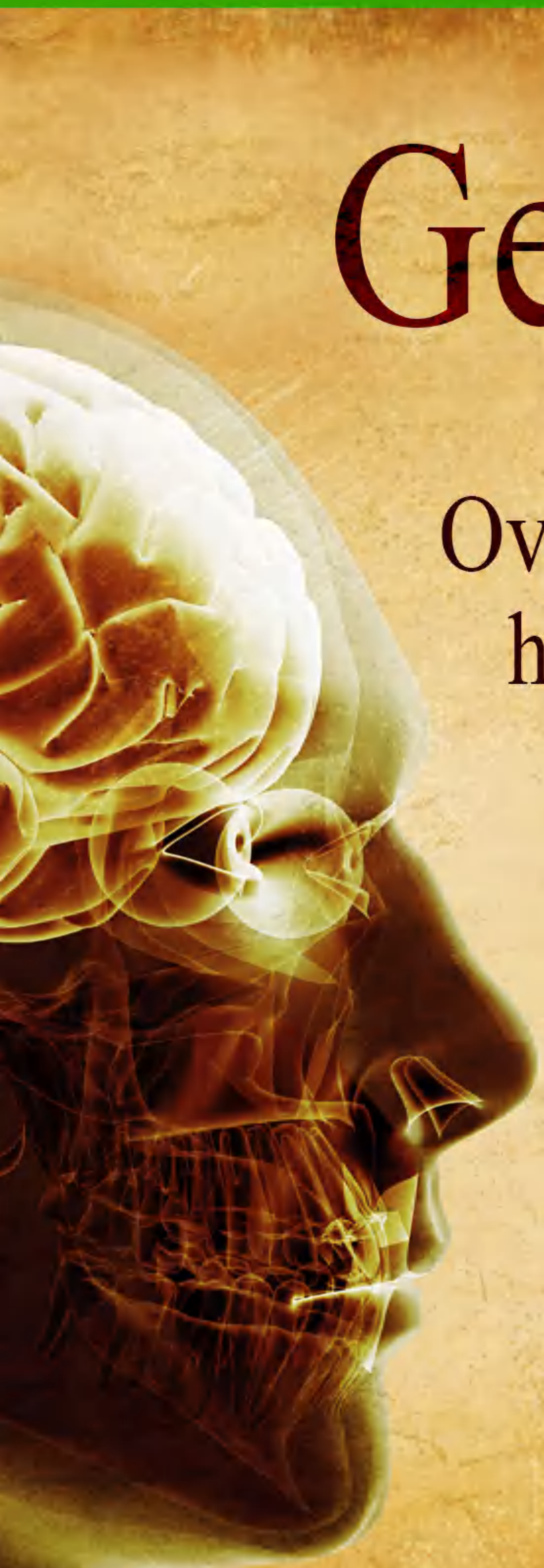
We all wept at this meeting, which seemed almost like a dream; then when we had recovered ourselves a little and had begun to talk, this question (mine, in fact) was proposed, to wit: Which was the happier of the two, Monsieur de Potrincourt and his people, or Monsieur de Biancourt and his? Truly, our hearts swelled within us, and God, in his mercy, showed that he took pleasure in our joy; for, after mass and dinner, there was nothing but going and coming from the ship to the settlement, and from the settlement to the [23] ship, each one wanting to embrace and be embraced by his friends, just as, after the winter, we rejoice in the beautiful spring, and after a siege, in our freedom. It happened that two persons from the settlement took one of the canoes of the savages to go to the ship. These canoes are so made that, if you do not sit very straight and steady, they imme-

on vire; arriva donc que, voulant retourner dans le mesme canot du navire à l'habitation ne sçay comment ne charrierent pas droict, et eux dans l'eau.

Le bonheur porta que pour lors je me promenois avec M. de Potrincourt à la rive. Nous voyons l'accident, et, à nostre pouvoir faisions signe avec nos chapeaux à ceux du navire, de courir au secours; car de crier, rien n'eust proffité, tant le navire estoit esloigné, et le vent faisoit du bruit. Personne n'y prenoit garde du commencement; de maniere que nostre recours fut à l'oraison, et de nous mettre à genou, n'y voyant autre remede; et Dieu eut pitié de nous. L'un des deux se saisit du canot renversé, et se jette dessus; l'autre, à la parfin, fut secouru d'une chaloupe, et tous deux ainsi retirez et sauvez nous comblerent de liesse, voyant comme la bonté divine, par sa toute parternelle douceur, n'avoit point voulu permettre que le malin esprit nous enviast et funestast un si bon jour. A elle soit gloire à tout jamays. Ainsy soit-il.

[24] Or maintenant il est temps qu'arrivés par la grâce de Dieu en santé nous jettions les yeux sur le pays, et y considerions un peu l'estat de la chrestienté que nous y trouvons. Tout son fondement consiste après Dieu en cette petite habitation d'une famille d'environ vingt personnes. Messire Iessé Flesche, vulgairement dict le Patriarche, en a eu la charge, et, dans un an qu'il y a demeuré, a baptizé quelque cent ou tant des Sauvages. Le mal a esté qu'il ne les a pu instruire comme il eust bien désiré, faute de sçavoir la langue, et avoir de quoy les entretenir; car celui qui leur nourrit l'âme faut quand et quand qu'il se delibere de sustenter leur corps.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ce bon personnage nous a fait beaucoup d'amitié, et a remercié Dieu de nostre venue; car il avoit jà de longtemps resolu de repasser en France à la premiere commodité; ce qu'il est bien ayse de faire maintenant, sans le regret d'abandonner une vigne qu'il auroit plantée.

On n'a pû jusques à maintenant traduire au langage du pays la croyance commune ou symbole, l'oraison de nostre Seigneur, les commandemens de Dieu, les Sacremens et autres chefs totalement necessaires à faire un chrestien.

Estant dernièrement au port Saint-Iean, je fus adverty qu'entre les autres Sauvages, il y en avoit cinq jà chrestiens. Ie prends de là occasion de leur [25] donner des images, et planter une croix devant leur cabane, chantant un *Salve Regina*. Ie leur fis faire le signe de la croix; mais je me trouvois bien esbahy, car autant quasi y entendoient les non-baptizés, que les chrestiens. Ie demandois à un chacun son nom de baptesme; quelques-uns ne le sçavoient pas, et ceux-là s'appeloient *Patriarches;* et la cause est parce que c'est le Patriarche qui leur impose le nom; car ils concluënt ainsy, il faut qu'ils s'appellent *Patriarches*, quand ils ont oublié leur vray nom.

Il y eut aussi pour rire, car lorsque je leur demandois s'ils estoient chrestiens, ils ne m'entendoient pas; quand je leur demandois s'ils estoient baptizés, ils me respondoient: *Hetaion enderquir Vortmandia Patriarché;* c'est à-dire: "Oui, le Patriarche nous a fait semblables aux Normans." Or, appellent-ils Normans tous les Françoys hormis les Malouins, qu'ils appellent Samaricois, et les Basques qu'ils disent Bascua.

Le *sagamo*, c'est-à-dire le seigneur du port Saint-

at the same time resolve to nourish their bodies. This worthy man has shown great friendliness toward us, and thanked God for our coming; for he had made up his mind some time ago to return to France at the first opportunity, which he is now quite free to do without regret at leaving a vine which he has planted.

They have not yet succeeded in translating into the native language the common creed or symbol, the Lord's prayer, the commandments of God, the Sacraments, and other principles quite necessary to the making of a christian.

Recently, when I was at port Saint John, I was informed that among the other Savages there were five who were already christians. Thereupon I took occasion to give them [25] some pictures, and to erect a cross before their wigwams, singing a *Salve Regina*. I had them make the sign of the cross; but I was very much astonished, for the unbaptized understood almost as much about it as the christians. I asked each one his baptismal name; some did not know theirs, so they called themselves *Patriarchs*, because it is the Patriarch who gives them their names, and thus they conclude that, when they have forgotten their own names, they ought to be called *Patriarchs*.

It was also rather amusing that, when I asked them if they were christians, they did not know what I meant; when I asked them if they had been baptized, they answered: *Hetaion enderquir Vortmandia Patriarché*, that is to say, "Yes, the Patriarch has made us like the Normans." Now they call all the French "Normans," except the Malouins,[43] whom they call Samaricois, and the Basques, Bascua.

The name of the *sagamore*, that is, the lord of port Saint John, is Cacagous, a man who is shrewd and cun-

Iean, est un appelé Cacagous, fin et matois s'il n'y en a point en la coste; c'est tout ce qu'il a rapporté de France (car il a esté en France), et me disoit qu'il avoit esté baptizé à Bajonne, me racontant cela comme qui raconteroit d'avoir esté par amitié conduit à un bal. Sur quoy, voyant le mal, et [26] voulant esprouver si je luy esmouverois point la conscience, je luy demandois combien il avoit de femmes. Il me respondit qu'il en avoit huict ; et de fait, il m'en compta sept, qu'il avoit là presentes, me les désignant avec autant de gloire, tant s'en faut qu'avec honte, comme si je luy eusse demandé combien il avoit de fils legitimes.

Un autre, qui cherchoit plusieurs femmes, comme je luy dissuadasse, luy alleguant qu'il estoit chrestien, me paya de cette response: *Reroure quiro Nortmandia :* c'est à-dire Cela est bon pour vous autres, Normans. Aussi ne voit-on gueres de changement en eux après le baptesme La mesme sauvagine et les mesmes mœurs demeurent, ou peu s'en faut, mesmes coustumes, ceremonies, us, façons et vices, au moins à ce qu'on en peut sçavoir, sans point observer aucune distinction de temps, jours, offices, exercices, prieres, debvoirs, vertus ou remedes spirituels.

Membertou, comme celuy qui hante le plus M. de Potrincourt dés long temps, est aussi le plus zelé, et montre le plus de foy; mais encore il se plaint de ne nous pas assez entendre, et desireroit d'estre prescheur, dit-il, s'il estoit bien instruict. Ce fut luy qui me fit l'autre jour une plaisante repartie; car, comme je luy enseignois son *Pater*, selon la traduction que m'en a fait M. de Biancourt, sur ce [27] que je lui faisois dire: *Nui en caraco nae iquem esmoi ciscou ;* c'est-à-dire, donne-nous aujourd'huy nostre pain quo-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

tidien. "Mais, dit-il, si je ne luy demandois que du pain, je demeurerois sans orignac ou poisson."

Le bon vieillard nous contoit avec grande affection comme Dieu l'assiste depuis qu'il est chrestien, et nous disoit que ce printemps, luy arriva de patir grande faim luy et les siens; que sur ce il luy souvint qu'il estoit chrestien, et par ce il pria Dieu. Après sa prière, allant veoir à la riviere, il trouva des esplans à suffisance. Et puiſque je suis sur ce vieux sagamo, premices de cette gentilité, je vous diray encore ce qui luy est arrivé cet hyver.

Il a esté malade, et ce qui est plus, jugé à mort par les *aoutmoins* ou sorciers du pays. Or est la coustume que dès aussitost que les Aoutmoins ont sentencié la maladie ou plaie estre mortelle, dès lors le patient ne mange plus; aussy ne luy donne-t-on rien. Ains, prenant sa belle robe, il entonne luy-mesme le chant de sa mort; après lequel cantique, s'il tarde trop à mourir, on luy jette force seaux d'eau dessus, pour l'advancer, et quelquefois l'enterre-t-on à demy vif. Or les enfants de Membertou, quoy que chrestien, se preparoient à user de ce beau devoir de pieté envers leur père; jà ils ne luy donnoient plus à manger, et luy ayant prins sa [28] belle robe de loutre, avoit, comme un cygne, chanté et conclu sa Nænie ou chant funerail. Une chose l'affligeoit encore, c'est qu'il ne sçavoit pas comment il debvoit bien mourir en chrestien, et qu'il ne disoit point adieu à M. de Potrincourt. Ces choses entendues, M. de Potrincourt vint à luy, luy remonstre et l'asseure qu'en despit de tous les Aoutmoins et Pilotois, il vivroit et recouvreroit santé, s'il vouloit manger; ce qu'il estoit tenu de faire, estant chrestien. Le bon homme crut,

anything but bread, I would be without moose-meat or fish.''

The good old man told us, with a great deal of feeling, how God is helping him since he has become a christian, saying that this spring it happened that he and his family were suffering much from hunger; then he remembered that he was a christian, and therefore prayed to God. After his prayer, he went to the river and found all the smelts he wanted. And while I am speaking of this old sagamore, the first fruit of this heathen nation, I will tell you also what happened this winter.

He was sick, and what is more, had been given up to die by the native *aoutmoins*, or sorcerers. Now it is the custom, when the Aoutmoins have pronounced the malady or wound to be mortal, for the sick man to cease eating from that time on, nor do they give him anything more. But, donning his beautiful robe,.he begins chanting his own death-song; after this, if he lingers too long, a great many pails of water are thrown over him to hasten his death, and sometimes he is buried half alive. Now the children of Membertou, though christians, were prepared to exercise this noble and pious duty toward their father; already they had ceased giving him anything to eat and had taken away his [28] beautiful otter robe, and he had, like the swan, finished his Nænie, or funeral chant. One thing still troubled him, that he did not know how to die like a christian, and he had not taken farewell of Monsieur de Potrincourt. When M. de Potrincourt heard these things, he went to see him, remonstrated with him, and assured him that, in spite of all the Aoutmoins and Pilotois, he would live and recover his health if he would eat

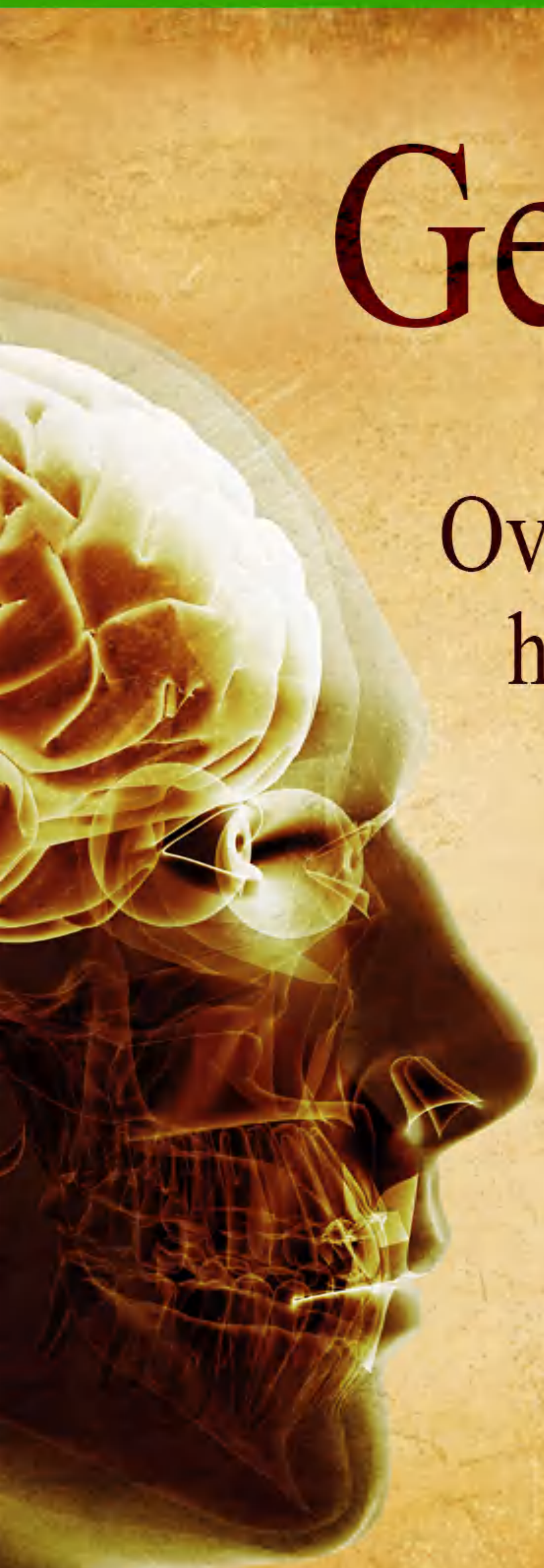
et fut sauvé; aujourd'huy il raconte cecy avec grand contentement, et rememore bien à propos comme Dieu a misericordieusement en cela fait entendre la malice et mensonge de leurs aoutmoins.

Je raconteray icy un autre faict du mesme Sieur de Potrincourt, et qui a beaucoup proffité à toute cette gentilité. Un sauvage chrestien estoit mort, et (marque de sa constance) il avoit mandé icy à l'habitation, pendant sa maladie, qu'il se recommandoit aux prieres. Aprés sa mort, les autres Sauvages se preparoient de l'enterrer à leur mode: leur mode est qu'ils prennent tout ce qui appartient au defunct, peaux, arcs, utensiles, cabannes, etc. bruslent tout cela, hurlants, brayants avec certains clameurs, sorceleries et invocations du malin esprit. M. de Potrincourt delibera de vertueusement resister à ces ceremonies. Il met donc en armes toutes ses gens, et [29] s'en va aux Sauvages en main forte, obtient par ce moyen ce qu'il demandoit, sçavoir est que le corps fust donné à M. le Patriarche, et ainsi l'enterrement fut faict à la chrestienne. Cet acte, d'autant qu'il n'a pû estre contrarié par les Sauvages, a esté loué par eux, et l'est encores.

La chappelle qu'on a eue jusque à maintenant, est fort petite, pirement accomodée, et en toutes façons incommode à tous exercices de religion. Pour remede, M. de Potrincourt nous a donné tout un quartier de son habitation, si nous pouvons le couvrir et accomoder. Seulement j'adjousteray encore un mot, que plusieurs seront bien ayses et édifiés d'ouïr.

Après mon arrivée icy à Port-Royal, j'ay esté avec M. de Potrincourt jusque aux Etechemins. Là, Dieu voulut que je rencontrasse le jeune du Pont de Sainct

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Malo, lequel ne sçays comment effarouché[1], avoit passé toute l'année avec les Sauvages, vivant de mesme qu'eux. C'est un jeune homme d'une grande force d'esprit et de corps, n'y ayant sauvage qui courre, agisse ou patisse ou parle mieux que luy. Il estoit en grandes apprehensions de M. de [30] Potrincourt; mais Dieu me donna tant de croyance envers luy, que sur ma parole il vint avec moy dans nostre navire, et, après quelques submissions et debvoir rendu par luy, la paix fut faite au grand contentement de tous. Au départir, comme les canonades bruyèrent, il me pria de luy assigner heure pour sa confession. Au lendemain matin, luy mesme prevint l'heure, tant il estoit en ferveur, et se confessa en l'orée de la mer, en la présence de tous les Sauvages, qui s'émerveilloient d'ainsy le voir à genoux devant moy si long temps. Depuis, il communia avec grand exemple, et puis dire que les larmes m'en vinrent aux yeux, et ne fus pas seul. Le diable fut confus de cet acte: aussy pensa-il subitement tout troubler l'aprés disnée suivante; mais Dieu mercy, par l'équité et bonté de M. de Potrincourt, le tout a esté remis en son entier.

Voilà, mon Révérend Pere, le discours de nostre voyage et des choses survenues tant en yceluy que devant celuy, et depuis nostre arrivée à cette habitation. Reste maintenant à vous dire que la conversion de ce pays à l'Evangile, et de ce peuple à la civilité, n'est pas petite, ni sans beaucoup de difficultez; car en premier lieu, si nous considerons le pays,

[1] « L'année prochainement passée, il avoit été fait prisonnier par le Sieur de Potrincourt, d'où s'estant esvadé subtilement, il avoit esté contraint courrir les bois en grande misere. » (*Relation imprimée.*)

frightened away [from the settlement],* had passed the entire year with the Savages, living just as they did. He is a young man of great physical and mental strength, excelled by none of the savages in the chase, in alertness and endurance, and in his ability to speak their language. He was very much afraid of M. de [30] Potrincourt: but God inspired me with so much faith in him that, relying upon my word, Du Pont came with me to our ship; and after making some apologies and promises, peace was declared, to the great satisfaction of all. When he departed, as the cannon were sounding, he begged me to appoint an hour to receive his confession. The next morning, in his great eagerness, he anticipated the hour, and made his confession upon the shores of the sea in the presence of all the Savages, who were greatly astonished at thus seeing him upon his knees so long before me. Then he took communion in a most exemplary manner, at which I can say tears came into my eyes, and not into mine alone. The devil was confounded at this act; so he straightway planned trouble for us that very afternoon; but thank God, through the justice and goodness of M. de Potrincourt, harmony was everywhere restored.

And now you have had, my Reverend Father, an account of our voyage, of what happened in it, and before it, and since our arrival at this settlement. It now remains to tell you that the conversion of this country, to the Gospel, and of these people to civilization, is not a small undertaking nor free from great difficulties; for, in the first place, if we consider the

* "The year before he had been made a prisoner by Sieur de Potrincourt; and having slyly escaped from him, he had been obliged to wander about in the woods in great misery."—(*Printed Relation.*)—[Carayon.]

ce n'est qu'une forest, sans autre commodité pour la vie que celles qu'on apportera de France, et avec le temps on pourroit retirer du terroir, après qu'on [31] l'aura cultivé. La nation est sauvage, vagabonde, mal habituée, rare et d'assez peu de gens. Elle est, dis-je, sauvage, courant les bois, sans lettres, sans police, sans bonnes mœurs; elle est vagabonde, sans aucun arrest, ni des maisons ni de parenté, ni des possessions ni de patrie; elle est mal habituée, gens extremement paresseux, gourmans, irreligieux, traitres, cruels en vengeance, et adonnés à toute luxure, hommes et femmes, les hommes ayant plusieurs femmes et les abandonnant à autruy, et les femmes ne leur servant que d'esclaves qu'ils battent et assomment de coups, sans qu'elles osent se plaindre; et après avoir esté demy meurtries, s'il plaist au meurtrier, il faut qu'elles rient et luy fassent caresses.

Avec tous ces maux, ils sont extrêmement glorieux: ils s'estiment plus vaillans, que nous, meilleurs que nous, plus ingenieux que nous, et, chose difficile à croire, plus riches que nous. Ils s'estiment, dis-je, plus vaillants que nous, se vantant qu'ils ont tué des Basques et Malouins, et fait beaucoup de mal aux navires, sans que jamays on en ait tiré vengeance, voulant dire que ce a esté faute de cœur. Ils s'estiment meilleurs: "Car, disent-ils, vous ne cessez de vous entrebattre et quereller l'un l'autre; nous vivons en paix. Vous estes envieux les uns des autres, et détractez les uns des autres ordinairement; [32] vous estes larrons et trompeurs; vous estes convoiteux, sans liberalité et misericorde: quant à nous, si nous avons un morceau du pain, nous le partissons entre nous.'

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Telles et semblables choses disent-ils communement, voyant les susdictes imperfections en quelques-uns de nos gens; et, se flattent de ce que quelques-uns d'entre eux ne les ont si éminentes, ne considerant (pas) qu'ils ont tous des vices beaucoup plus énormes, et que la meilleure part des nostres n'ont pas mesmes les vices susdicts, concluent universellement qu'ils vallent mieux que tous les chrestiens. C'est l'amour propre qui les aveugle, et le malin esprit qui les seduit, ne plus ne moins que vous voyez en nostre France les desvoyés de la foy s'estimer et se vanter estre meilleurs que les catholiques, d'autant qu'en quelques-uns ils voyent beaucoup de vices, ne regardants ni les vertus des autres catholiques, ni leurs vices beaucoup plus grands; ne voulant, comme Cyclopes, avoir qu'un seul œil, et celuy fiché sur aucuns vices de quelques catholiques, et jamays sur les vertus des autres, ni sur eux, sinon pour se tromper.

Ils s'estiment aussi plus ingenieux, d'autant qu'ils nous voyent admirer aucunes de leurs manufactures, comme œuvres de personnes si rudes et grossieres, [33] et admirent peu ce que nous leur monstrons, quoy que beaucoup plus digne d'estre admiré, faute d'esprit. De là vient qu'ils s'estiment beaucoup plus riches que nous, quoy qu'ils soyent extremement pauvres et souffreteux.

Cacagous, duquel j'ai cy-devant parlé, a bonne grace, quand il a un peu haussé le ton; car pour monstrer sa bonne affection envers les Françoys, il se vante de vouloir aller veoir le Roy, et luy porter un present de cent castors, et fait estat, ce faisant, de le faire le plus riche de tous ses predecesseurs. La

They are saying these and like things continually, seeing the above-mentioned imperfections in some of us, and flattering themselves that some of their own people do not have them so conspicuously, not realizing that they all have much greater vices, and that the better part of our people do not have even these defects, they conclude generally that they are superior to all christians. It is self-love that blinds them, and the evil one who leads them on, no more nor less than in our France, we see those who have deviated from the faith holding themselves higher and boasting of being better than the catholics, because in some of them they see many faults; considering neither the virtues of the other catholics, nor their own still greater imperfections; wishing to have, like Cyclops, only a single eye, and to fix that one upon the vices of a few catholics, never upon the virtues of the others, nor upon themselves, unless it be for the purpose of self-deception.

Also they [the savages] consider themselves more ingenious, inasmuch as they see us admire some of their productions as the work of people so rude and ignorant; [33] lacking intelligence, they bestow very little admiration upon what we show them, although much more worthy of being admired. Hence they regard themselves as much richer than we are, although they are poor and wretched in the extreme.

Cacagous, of whom I have already spoken, is quite gracious when he is a little elated about something; to show his kindly feelings toward the French he boasts of his willingness to go and see the King, and to take him a present of a hundred beaver skins, proudly suggesting that in so doing he will make him richer than all his predecessors. They get this

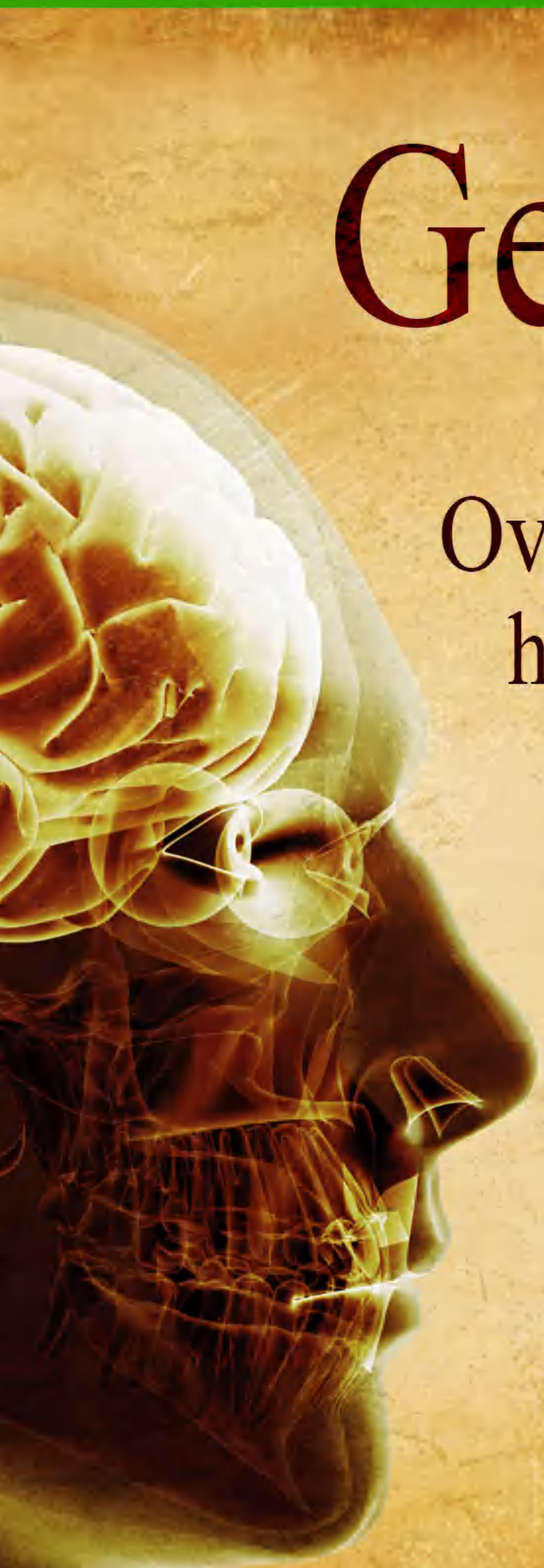
cause aussy de ce jugement leur vient de l'extreme et bruslante convoitise de leurs castors qu'ils voyent regner en quelques-uns des nostres.

Non moins plaisant est le discours d'un certain Sagamo, qui ayant ouy raconter de M. de Potrincourt, que le Roy estoit jeune et à marier: "Peut-estre, dit-il, luy pourray-je donner ma fille pour femme; mais, selon les us et coustumes du pays, il faudroit que le Roy lui fist de grands presens: sçavoir, quatre ou cinq barriques de pain, trois de pois ou de febves, un de petun, quatre ou cinq chapots de cent sols pièce, avec quelques arcs, flesches, harpons, et semblables denrées."

Voylà les marques de l'esprit de cette nation, qui est fort peu peuplée, principalement les Soriquois et Etechemins qui avoysinent la mer, combien que [34] Membertou assure qu'en sa jeunesse il a veu *chimonutz*, c'est-à-dire des Sauvages aussi dru semés que les cheveux de la teste. On tient qu'ils sont ainsi diminués depuis que les François ont commencé à y hanter: car, depuis ce temps-là, ils ne font tout l'esté que manger; d'où vient que, prenant une tout autre habitude, et amassant de humeurs, l'automne et l'hyver ils payent leurs intemperies par pleurésies, esquinances, flux de sang, qui les font mourir. Seulement cette année, soixante en sont morts au Cap de la Hève, qui est la plus grande partie de ce qu'ils y estoient; et neantmoins personne du petit peuple de M. de Potrincourt n'a esté seulement malade, nonobstant toute l'indigence qu'ils ont paty; ce qui a faict apprehender les Sauvages que Dieu nous deffend et protége comme son peuple particulier et bien-aymé.

Ce que je dis de cette rareté d'habitants de cette

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

contrée, se doict entendre de ceux qui paroissent en la coste de la mer; car, dans les terres, principalement des Etechemins, il y a force peuple, à ce qu'on dit. Toutes ces choses conjoinctes avec la difficulté du langage, le temps qu'il y faudra consommer, les despends qu'il y faudra faire, les grandes incommoditez et labeurs et disettes qu'il faudra endurer, declarent assez la grandeur de cette entreprise, et les difficultés qui la pourront traverser. Toutes [35] fois plusieurs choses m'encouragent à la poursuite d'icelle.

Premierement l'esperance que j'ay en la bonté et providence de Dieu. Esaïe nous assure que le royaume de nostre Redempteur doict estre recognu par toute la terre, et qu'il ne doict avoir ni antres de dragons, ni cavernes de basilisques, ni rochers inaccessibles, ni abysmes tant profonds que son humanité n'adoucisse, son salut ne guerisse, son abondance ne fertilise, son humilité ne surhausse, et enfin que sa croix ne triomphe victorieusement. Et pour quoy n'esperay-je que le temps est venu auquel cette prophetie doict estre accomplie en ces quartiers? Que si cela est, qu'y a-t-il de tant difficile que nostre Dieu ne puisse faciliter?

En second lieu, je mets la consideration du Roy nostre Sire. C'est un Roy qui nous promet rien de moindre que le feu Roy son pere l'incomparable Henri le Grand. Cet œuvre a commencé avec son reigne, et peut on dire que depuis cent années la France s'est approprié ce pays, ou en a si veritablement pris possession, ny tant faict, que depuis son reigne, que Dieu remplisse de toutes benedictions. Il ne voudra permettre que son nom et ses armes paroissent en ces regions avec le paganisme, son au-

of these countries must be understood as referring to the people who live upon the coast; for farther inland, principally among the Etechemins, there are, it is said, a great many people. All these things, added to the difficulty of acquiring the language, the time that must be consumed, the expenses that must be incurred, the great distress, toil and poverty that must be endured, fully proclaim the greatness of this enterprise and the difficulties which beset it. Yet [35] many things encourage me to continue in it.

First, my trust in the goodness and providence of God. Isaiah assures us that the kingdom of our Redeemer shall be recognized throughout the earth; and that there shall be neither caves of dragons nor dens of cockatrices, nor inaccessible rocks, nor abysses so deep, that his grace will not soften and his salvation curè, his abundance fertilize, his humility raise up, and over which his cross will not at last victoriously triumph. And why shall I not hope that the time has come when this prophecy is to be fulfilled in these lands? If that be so, what can there be so difficult that our Lord cannot make it easy?

In the second place, I rely upon the King, our Sire. He is a Sovereign who promises us nothing less than the late King, his father, the incomparable Henry the Great. This work began in the latter's reign, and it may be said that in the century since France has appropriated this country, or has so completely taken possession of it, there has not been so much accomplished at any time as since our present king became sovereign; may God fill his reign with all blessings. He will not permit his name and arms to stand in these regions side by side with paganism, his authority with barbarism, his renown with sav-

thorité avec la barbarie, sa renommée avec la sauvagine, son pouvoir avec l'indigence, [36] sa foy avec manquement, ses subjects sans ayde ni secours. Sa mère aussy, une autre Reyne Blanche, visant à la gloire de Dieu, contemplera ces deserts et nouveliers siens, où, au commencement de sa Regence, le coutre de l'Evangile a par son moyen ouvert quelque esperance de moisson, et se souviendra de ce que le feu Roy, grand de sagesse aussi bien que de valeur, prononça au Sieur de Potrincourt venant en ce pays: "Allez, dit-il, je trace l'édifice; mon fils le bastira." Ce que nous supplions vostre Reverence de luy representer, et ensemble le bon œuvre que leurs Majestés peuvent faire en ces quartiers, si c'estoit leur bon playsir de fonder et donner quelque honneste revenu à cette residence, de laquelle se pourroit s'epandre par toute cette contrée ceux qui y seroyent eslevés et entretenus.

Voylà le second fondement de nostre esperance, auquel j'adjousteray la pieté et largesse que nous avons experimenté sur nostre depart ès-seigneurs et dames de cette tres-noble et tres-chrestienne cour, me promettant qu'ils ne voudront manquer de favoriser de leurs moyens cette entreprise, pour ne perdre ce que desjà ils y ont employé, ce qui leur sert d'ares de gloire et de felicité immortelle devant Dieu.

M. de Potrincourt, Seigneur doux et équitable, [37] vaillant, amé et experimenté en ces quartiers, et M. de Biancourt son fils, imitateur des vertus et belles qualitez de son pere, tous deux zelés au service de Dieu, qui nous honorent et cherissent plus que nous ne meritons, nous donnent aussi grand courage de nous employer en ceste ouvrage de tout nostre pouvoir.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Finalement, l'assiete et condition de ce lieu, qui promet beaucoup pour l'usage de la vie humaine, s'il est cultivé, et sa beauté, qui me fait esmerveiller de ce qu'il a esté si peu recherché jusques à maintenant, où est ce port où nous sommes, fort propre pour d'icy nous estendre aux Armouchiquois, Iroquois et Montagnes, nos voisins, qui sont grands peuples, et labourent les terres comme nous; ce lieu, dis-je, nous fait esperer quelque chose à l'advenir. Que si nos Souriquois sont peu, ils se peuvent peupler; s'ils sont sauvages, c'est pour les domestiquer et civiliser qu'on vient icy; s'ils sont rudes, nous ne devons point estre pour cela paresseux; s'ils ont jusqu'ici peu profité, ce n'est merveille, ce seroit rigueur d'exiger si tost fruict d'un gref, et demander sens et barbe d'un enfant.

Pour conclusion, nous esperons avec le temps les rendre susceptible de la doctrine de la foy et religion chrestienne et catholique, et après, passer [38] plus avant aux regions de deçà plus habitées et cultivées, comme dict est; esperance que nous appuyons sur la bonté et misericorde de Dieu, sur le zele et fervente charité de tous les gens de bien qui affectueusement desirent le royaume de Dieu, particulierement sur les sainctes prieres de Vostre Reverence et de nos RR. PP. et très-chers FF. auxquels très-affectueusement nous nous recommandons.

Du Port-Royal en la Nouvelle-France, ce dixiesme juin mil six cents onze.

Pierre BIARD.

condition of this place, which, if it is cultivated, promises to furnish a great deal for the needs of human life; and its beauty causes me to wonder that it has been so little sought up to the present time. From this port where we now are, it is very convenient for us to spread out to the Armouchiquois, Iroquois, and Montagnais, our neighbors, which are populous nations and till the soil as we do; this situation, I say, makes us hope something for the future. For, if our Souriquois are few, they may become numerous; if they are savages, it is to domesticate and civilize them that we have come here; if they are rude, that is no reason that we should be idle; if they have until now profited little, it is no wonder, for it would be too much to expect fruit from this grafting, and to demand reason and maturity from a child.

In conclusion, we hope in time to make them susceptible of receiving the doctrines of the faith and of the christian and catholic religion, and later, to penetrate [38] farther into the regions beyond, which they say are more populous and better cultivated. We base this hope upon Divine goodness and mercy, upon the zeal and fervent charity of all good people who earnestly desire the kingdom of God, particularly upon the holy prayers of Your Reverence and of our Reverend Fathers and very dear Brothers, to whom we most affectionately commend ourselves.

From Port Royal, New France, this tenth day of June, one thousand six hundred and eleven.

PIERRE BIARD.

[39] Lettre du Père Ennemond Masse au R. P. Claude Aquaviva, Général de la Compagnie de Jésus.

(*Traduite sur l'original latin.*)

PORT-ROYAL, 10 juin 1611.

MON TRÈS-RÉVÉREND PÈRE,

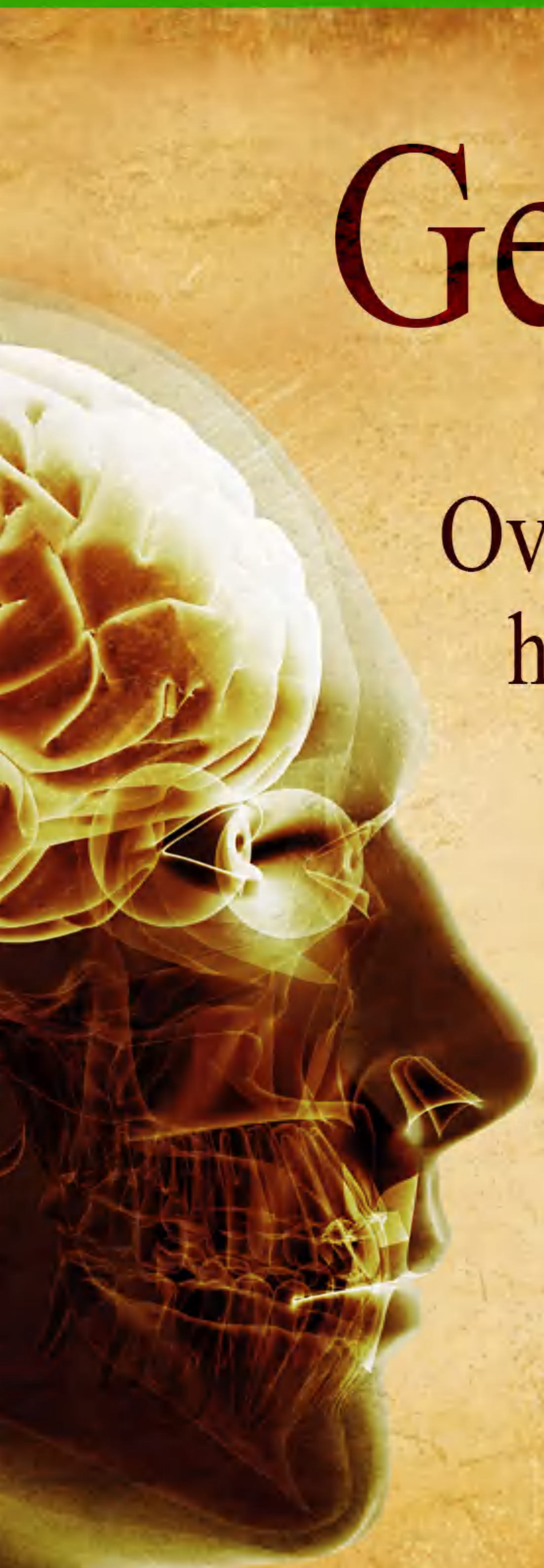
Pax Christi.

Si Votre Paternité a vu avec plaisir ma lettre du 13 octobre, j'en ai éprouvé bien davantage à recevoir la sienne du 7 décembre; d'autant plus que je suis le premier de la Compagnie qui ait reçu la première lettre que Votre Paternité ait jamais envoyée au Canada. Je prends ce fait comme un heureux augure, et je l'accepte comme venant du ciel, pour m'exciter *à courir avec ferveur dans la carrière*, afin de mériter et de recevoir *le prix de cette vocation céleste*, et enfin de me sacrifier moi-même plus promptement et plus complétement pour le salut de ces peuples.

Je vous l'avoue; *j'ai dit alors* franchement à Dieu: *Me voici: Si vous choisissez ce qu'il y a de faible et de méprisable dans ce monde, pour renverser* [40] et *détruire ce qui est fort*, vous trouverez tout cela dans Ennemond. *Me voici: envoyez-moi, et rendez ma langue* et *ma parole intelligible, afin que je ne sois pas barbare pour ceux qui m'entendront.*

Vos prières, j'en ai la confiance, ne seront pas sans succès, comme semble le présager notre arrivée ici, le très-saint jour de la Pentecôte. *Nous sommes faibles en Jésus-Christ, mais*, je l'espère, *nous vivrons avec lui*

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

par la force de Dieu. Que Votre Paternité, je l'en conjure, obtienne par ses saintes prières et ses saints sacrifices, que le Seigneur accomplisse toutes ces choses en nous.

Le fils indigne en Jésus-Christ de la Compagnie de Jésus.

ENNEMOND MASSE.

Port-Royal, dans la Nouvelle-France, le 10 juin 1611.

my earnest entreaty that Your Reverence, by your prayers and holy sacrifices, may prevail upon the Lord to accomplish all these things in us.

The unworthy son in Jesus Christ, of the Society of Jesus,

ENNEMOND MASSE.

Port Royal, New France, June 10, 1611.

[41] Lettre du P. Pierre Biard, au T.-R. P. Claude Aquaviva, Général de la Compagnie de Jésus.

(*Traduite sur l'original latin.*)

PORT-ROYAL, 11 juin 1611.

MON TRÈS-RÉVÉREND PÈRE,

Pax Christi.

Après quatre mois d'une navigation vraiment trèspénible et très-périlleuse, nous sommes enfin arrivés, grâce à la protection de Dieu et aux prières de Votre Paternité, à Port-Royal, dans cette Nouvelle-France, terme de notre voyage.

Nous avons en effet quitté Dieppe le 26 janvier de cette année 1611, et nous sommes arrivés cette même année le 22 mai. Je donne en français au R. P. Provincial la relation de toute notre entreprise et de l'état où nous avons trouvé les choses ici. C'est ce qui me paraissait plus urgent et plus utile, puisque j'étais dans l'impossibilité de le faire en même temps en latin. Je ne me suis pas encore arrêté huit jours à Port-Royal, et tout le temps est [42] absorbé par des interruptions continuelles et par les nécessités de la vie. Au reste, le P. Masse et moi, nous nous portons assez bien, grâce à Dieu: mais il nous a fallu prendre un serviteur pour les travaux matériels. Nous ne pouvions nous en passer sans un grand détriment pour l'esprit et pour le cœur.

M. de Potrincourt, qui commande ici au nom du Roi, nous aime et nous estime en proportion de sa piété.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

A la première occasion nous nous empresserons, avec la grâce de Dieu, de dire quelles sont nos espérances de succès.

Le vaisseau s'est déjà éloigné. Je vais être obligé d'aller le rejoindre en canot, pour qu'il ne parte sans mes lettres.

Je conjure Votre Paternité, par les mérites de Jésus-Christ, de se souvenir de nous et de ces contrées très-solitaires, et de venir à notre secours, autant qu'elle le pourra, non-seulement par le moyen des prières très-ferventes de notre Compagnie, mais aussi par la bénédiction et les faveurs de notre Saint-Père le Pape (comme je les ai déjà demandées).

Assurément nous semons dans une grande pauvreté et dans les larmes; daigne le Seigneur nous accorder de moissonner un jour dans la joie. C'est ce qui arrivera, comme je l'espère et comme je l'ai [43] dit, grâce aux prières et aux bénédictions de Votre Paternité, que je sollicite humblement,

de Votre Paternité,

Le fils et serviteur indigne,

Pierre BIARD, S.J.

A Port-Royal, dans la Nouvelle-France, ou Canada, le 11 de juin 1611.

We shall take the first opportunity to impart to you what may be, by the grace of God, our prospects of success in this country.

The ship has already gone. I shall be obliged to overtake it in a canoe, that it may not leave without my letters.

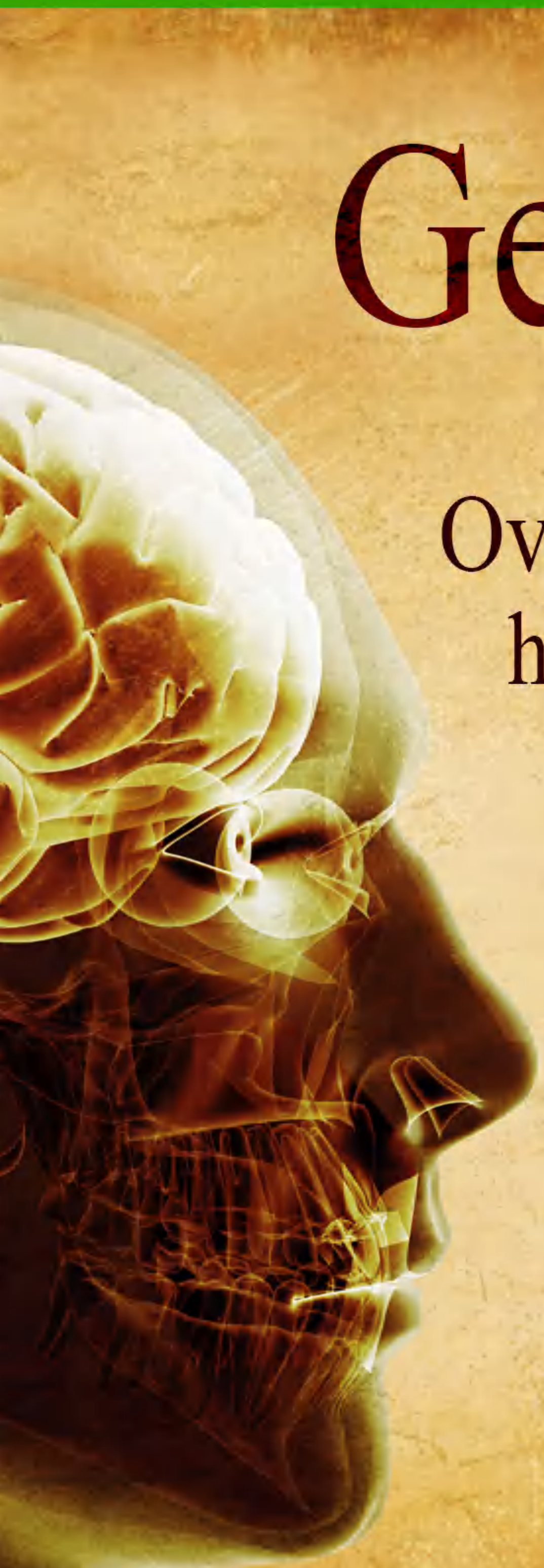
I conjure Your Reverence, through the merits of Jesus Christ, to remember us and these solitary lands, and to come to our aid in so far as you are able, not only by the fervent prayers of our Society, but also by the blessing and favor of our Holy Father the Pope (which I have already invoked). Surely we sow in great poverty and in tears; may the Lord grant that we some day reap in joy. Which will come to pass, as I hope and have said, [43] through the prayers and blessings of Your Reverence, which are humbly solicited by your

Unworthy son and servant,

PIERRE BIARD, S.J.

Port Royal, New France, or Canada, June 11, 1611.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

VII

JOUVENCY'S CANADICÆ MISSIONIS RELATIO

ROME: GIORGIO PLACKO, 1710

SOURCE: We follow the general style of O'Callaghan's Reprint No. 4. The Title-page, Eulogy of Biard, and Table of Contents, are the work of that Editor. The Text, and List of Missions in 1710, he reprinted from Jouvency's *Historia Societatis Jesu* (Rome, 1710), part v., pp. 321–325, 961, 962; the proof of these we have read from a copy of that work, found in the library of the College of St. Francis Xavier, New York. The bracketed pagination in Arabic figures is that of Jouvency; that in Roman, of O'Callaghan.

CANADICÆ

MISSIONIS

RELATIO

Ab anno 1611 *uſque ad annum* 1613, *cum ſtatu ejuſdem Miſſionis, annis* 1703 & 1710,

Auctore JOSEPHO JUVENCIO, Societatis Jeſu, Sacerdote.

Ex Hiſtoriæ Soc. Jeſu. Lib. xv. Part. v, impreſſa

ROMÆ

Ex Typographia Georgii Plachi

M. D. CC. X.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[i] P. Petri Biardi Eulogium ac Vita.

DE Patre Petro Biardo qui tantam in Miſſione Canadica inchoanda partem geſſit hæc ſcribit Pater Joſephus Juvencius in ſua Hiſtoriâ ſub anno 1622.

"Ex omnibus qui hoc anno vivere in provincia Lugdunenſi deſierunt, luctu maximo elatus eſt Avenione P. PETRUS BIARDUS Gratianopolitanus. Religionis propagandæ ſtudio navigaverat ad barbaros Canadenſes, fueratque inter primos ejus terræ cultores, ut in quinta parte narratum eſt. Inde pulſus ab hæreticis Anglis, & redire in Galliam coactus, totum ſe impendit [ii] juvandis popularibus fuis, quorum ut ſaluti conſuleret, nihil ſibi reliqui ad laborem diligentiamque faciebat. Ejus tamen induſtriam experti maxime funt Parodienſes in præfectura Carolitana, quam civitatem per uſitata ordinis miniſteria diu coluit. Noviſſime regionis præfectus Marchio Ragnius, juſſus a rege copias in Campaniam ducere contra Erneſtum Manſfeldium Galliæ finibus imminentem, Biardum ſibi adſciverat comitem expeditionis, & ſacrorum miniſtrum. Per eam occaſionem neſcias, utrum ſpectata magis ſit apoſtolici viri charitas, an patienta. Magna erat in caſtris inopia commeatuum. Diaria militibus præbebantur adeo maligne, ut nonnulli fame perirent. Biardus cibario, &

[i] Eulogy and Life of Father Peter Biard.

CONCERNING Father Peter Biard, who performed so great a part in the establishment of the Canadian Mission, Father Joseph Juvency[46] writes these things in his History, under the year 1622:

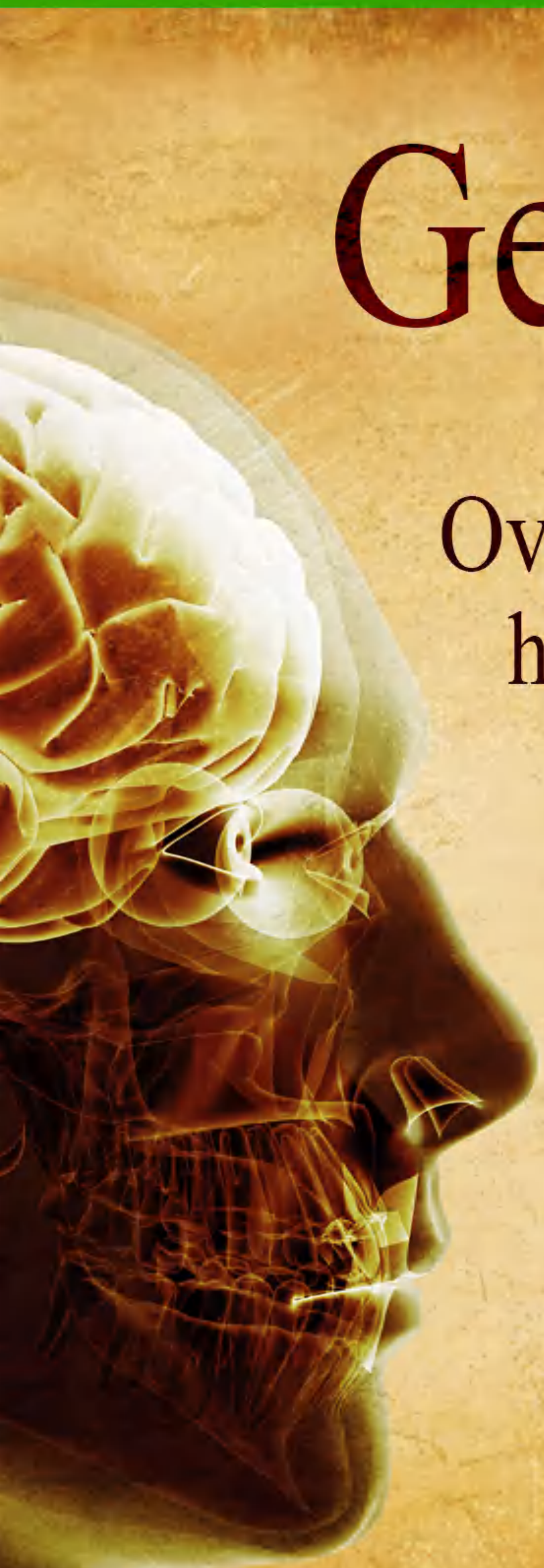
"Of all who during the present year have departed this life in the province of Lyons, the most regretted was FATHER PETER BIARD, of Grenoble, who was taken away at Avignon. With the desire of propagating religion, he had journeyed to the barbarous Canadians, and had been among the first settlers of that country, as has been narrated in the fifth part (of this volume). Upon being driven thence by the heretical English, and compelled to return to France, he entirely devoted himself [ii] to the service of his countrymen; and, that he might provide for their salvation, in no respect showed himself deficient either in labor or diligence. His industry, however, was especially enjoyed by the Paray le Monial, in the prefecture of Charolles, which community he long served with the customary ministrations of the order. Finally, the prefect of the district, Marchio Ragne, upon being ordered by the king to lead troops into Campania against Ernest von Mansfeld,[47] who was threatening the frontiers of France, had selected Biard as his companion during the expedition, and as a minister of sacred rites. Upon that occasion one would doubt whether the charity of the apostolic man, or his patience, were the more remarkable. There was in the camp a great scarcity of provisions. Rations were so

demenſum ſuum, ac ſiquid præterea pecuniolæ a ditioribus emendicando corrogaſſet, inter egentiſſimos militum partiebatur, ſe ipſum fraudans diurno victu, ut aliis benigne faceret. Avenionem conceſſerat [iii] denique, ut attritas tot laboribus vires paucorum dierum otio reficeret. Verum quaſi divinans, inſtare ſibi omnium laborum & vitæ finem, totum illud tempus impendit excolendo piis commentationibus animo inter tirones, feque ad primam tirocinii formam ſenex emeritus ita compoſuit, ut nullam omitteret earum exercitationum, quibus ad fui mundique contemptum erudiri ſolent novitii. His intentum, nihilque jam præter cæleſtia cogitantem mors oppreſſit, xv. Cal. Decembris."

Adhæc non inutile forſan videbitur adjicere quæ ab auctore antiquiore Philippo ſcilicet Alegambe ſcripta ſunt in Catalogo Scriptorum Societatis Jeſu, ſub verbo Biard:

"Petrus Biardus natione Gallus, patriâ Gratianopolitanus, operarius magni zeli, atque adeò multarum palmarum, quas [iv] in horridis et inuiis Canadenſium Septentrionalis Americæ populorum ſiluis primus legit. Extrema ibi omnia paſſus, nihil tamen inhumanum magis, quàm Hæreticos, expertus eſt. Feritatis oblita gens barbara integerrimi hominis innocentiam venerari diſcebat; cùm ecce tibi ſanctitatis inimica, Deumque neſciens Hæriſis, cum Anglis Canadæ oras irrupit; difficillimæ expeditionis ingens pretium fuit, exoſum inde abducere Jeſuitam. Ha-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

bitus eſt in vinculis aliquamdiu; & vix tandem in Galliam nudus ab omni remiſſus. Intereà verò dum integrum illi eſſet ad noualia Canadæ redire, damnum ab Hæreticis illatum ſanctè vltus eſt: reliquo vitæ tempore quæſiuit intentiſſimis ſtudiis ad vitam illos, à quibus ad necem adductus fuerat. Docuerat olim Theologiam Lugduni, non ſine laude. Reuerſus è Miſſione Caſtrenſi, cùm Auenionem diuertiſſit, & opportunitate temporis vſus feceſſiſſet in Nouitiatum, in ipſis [v] penè ſpiritualium Exercitiorum initiis, ad paradiſi contemplationem, vt credimus, euocatus eſt, die XIX. Nouembris, Anno MDCXXIJ.

Præter *Epiſtolam ad R. P. Præpoſitum Generalem è Portu Regali*, et *Relationem Expeditionis Anglorum in Canadam*, P. Biardus ſcripſit *Librum pro auctoritate Pontificis*, contra Martinettum Miniſtrum. Gallicè etiam edidit ſeorſim *Relationem Novæ Franciæ & itineris Patrum Societatis Jeſu ad illam.* Lugduni apud L. Muguet, MDCXVI. in 12.

very laborious expedition was great,—to drive thence the hated Jesuit. For some time he was kept in bonds; and at last, stripped of everything, he was with difficulty restored to France. But meanwhile, until it was safe to return to the wilds of Canada, he took vengeance in a holy manner for the injury inflicted by the Heretics; during the rest of his life he sought with the greatest enthusiasm to win to life those by whom he had been devoted to death. He had formerly taught Theology at Lyons, not without commendation. On his return from the Military Mission, when he had turned aside to Avignon, and, making use of his opportunity, had retired into the Novitiate, in [v] almost the very beginning of his spiritual Exercises, he was called away to the contemplation of paradise, as we believe, on the 19th day of November, in the year 1622.

Besides a *Letter to R. P. General Commander from Port Royal*, and *An Account of the Expedition of the English against Canada*, Father Biard wrote *A Book Advocating the authority of the Pontiff* against Martinet, a minister. In French, also, he published separately *An Account of New France and of the journey thither of the Fathers of the Society of Jesus*. Lyons, by L. Muguet, 1616, in 12mo."—[O'CALLAGHAN.]

[vii] Tabvla Rervm.

		Pag.
	SOCIETAS Jesu, in Canadam, seu Novam Franciam inducta . . .	5
II	*Initium Canadicæ Missionis, & primi fructus*	7
III	*Domicilia Societatis & Missiones in Nova Francia*	18
IV	*Missio Canadensis ab Anglis proturbata* .	25
V	*Unus è Societate interficitur; alii Canada ejiciuntur*	27
VI	*Missiones Societatis Jesu in America septentrionali, Anno* 1710 . .	37

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Missionis Canadicæ Relatio.

[321 §. II.] SOCIETAS JESU, IN CANADAM, SEU NOVAM FRANCIAM INDUCTA.

AMERICAM ſeptentrionalem tres præcipuè nationes obtinent, Hiſpani, Galli, & Angli. Mexicum, Floridæ pars & Californiæ, ſunt Hiſpanæ ditionis. Littora orienti foli oppoſita & ad Auſtrum devexa occuparunt variis temporibus Angli, Sueci, & Hollandi. Quod inter illos & Mexicanos verſus ſeptentriones & occaſum campi jacet, Galli tenent, ac Novam Franciam, ſive Canadam, vulgo vocant. Nihil tetrius immaniuſve barbaris Canadenſibus fingi poterat, prius quam inducta religione miteſcerent, ut patebit ex iis quæ Paragrapho decimo referentur. Nunc barbaries, & fœda ſcelerum cohors, rationi ac virtuti locum dedit, videturque huic oraculo* veteri conſtare fides: *Lætabitur deſerta & invia, & exultabit ſolitudo, & florebit quaſi lilium.*

**Iſai. c. 35.*

An Account of the Canadian Mission.

[321 § II.] THE SOCIETY OF JESUS INTRODUCED INTO CANADA, OR NEW FRANCE.

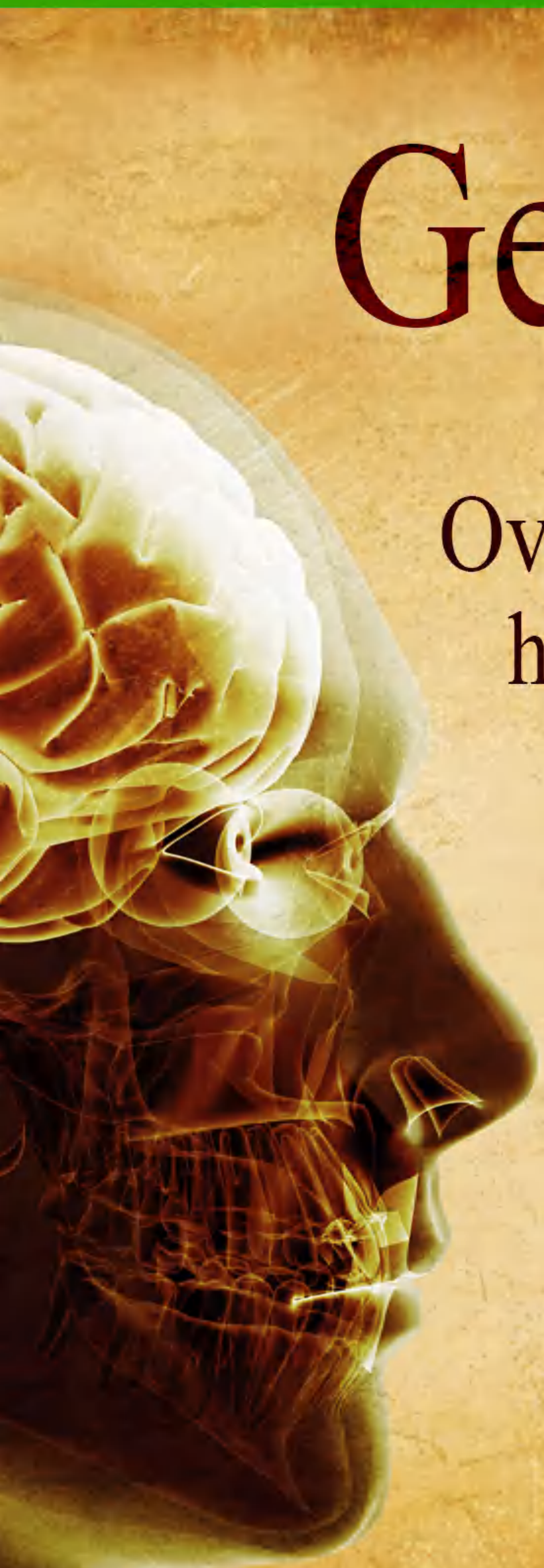
NORTH AMERICA is occupied principally by three nations—the Spanish, the French, and the English. Mexico, a part of Florida and of California, belongs to the Spanish dominions. The shores opposite to the rising sun, and stretching Southward, have been occupied at various times by the English, the Swedes, and the Dutch. The French possess the territory which lies between these and the Mexicans, towards the north and west, commonly called New France or Canada. Nothing fouler and more hideous than the savage Canadians could have been imagined, before they began to soften under the influence of religion, as will appear from matters to be presented in the tenth Paragraph. Now, barbarism and the vile array of sins have given place to reason and virtue, which seems to confirm our faith in this ancient prophecy:* *The land that was desolate and impassable shall be glad, and the wilderness shall rejoice, and shall flourish like the lily.*

*Isaiah, c. 35.

INITIUM CANADICÆ MISSIONIS, & PRIMI FRUCTUS.

AMERICÆ littora, Franciæ obverſa, Galli jam inde ab anno MDXXIV. identidem luſtravere runt: ſed obiter, & quaſi prætereuntes. Demum ſuperiori ſeculo ineunte, regionem interiorem ſubiit Samuel Camplenius, qui Canadenſis coloniæ parens merito dici poteſt. Jamque negotiatio belliſſimè procedebat, cum Henricus IV. de religione magis, quàm de commercio ſolicitus, in hanc Orbis novi partem inferre Chriſtiana ſacra decrevit, anno MDCVIII. ac Societatis homines ad hanc Apoſtolicam expeditionem poſtulavit. Certior de conſilio Regis factus P. Petrus Cotonus, regiæ conſcientiæ moderator, juſſuſque ſtrenuos quamprimum deſignare ſacerdotes, qui ſolida tanti operis jacerent fundamenta, Societatis Præpoſitum admonuit. Ex omni, non juvenum modo, ſed etiam ſenum, numero, laboriosam Miſſionem flagitantium, delecti ſunt P. Petrus Biardus, Gratianopolitanus, theologiæ profeſſor in collegio Lugdunenſi; & P. Enemundus Maſſæus, Lugdunenſis. Moram conſiliis felicibus attulit Regis improviſa mors; & Societatis amicorum ſtudia, qui navem & reliqua itineri neceſſaria comparabant, debilitavit. Sed invicta rebus adverſis Cotoni pietas, Reginæ auctoritatem interpoſuit, ut difficultates objectas profligaret. Ergo indicitur profectio: Patres

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Deppam advolant, inde vela Novam in Franciam facturi. Ecce autem repentè inexpectatus obex. Ea navis erat Potrincurtii, nobilis Galli: duobus tamen mercatoribus Calvinianis obnoxia, utpote qui ſumptus non leves ad illam armamentis inſtruendam fecerant. Iſti ſimul atque imponendos in hanc homines Societatis audierunt, negant enimvero ſe paſſuros ut è portu ſolvat. Opponitur imperium Reginæ, mandata ingeminantur. Reſpondent per ſe non ſtare quin facerdotes alii quilibet admittantur; at ſibi cum noſtris hominibus nihil eſſe rei velle. Ubi vidit Cotonus improborum pertinaciam frangi non poſſe, alia rem aggreſſus eſt via. Erat matrona non pietate minus quàm genere nobilis, Antonia Guerchevillæa. Hæc negotium Miſſionis haud fecus procurabat, ac ſuum: utque non vulgarem apud multos gratiam, virtutis opinione collegerat, magnam ſubito pecuniæ vim corrogavit, qua mercatoribus hæreticis ſumma rependeretur, ab iis in adornandam navim contributa. Sic illis rejectis & invitis, Patres admiſſi ſuerunt. At, quia interim extractum tempus fuerat, non ante VII. Kalend. Februarias, cum hyemaret aſperum æquor, vela ſunt facta. Hinc menſium quatuor curſus fuit, qui vulgo duorum eſt; ac morbis intus, tempeſtatibus foris, infeſtus. Ingreſſi demum oſtia Laurentiani fluvii XI. Kal. Junias, ipſo ſacro Pentecoſtes die, veſtigia Chriſtianæ religionis aliqua invenere, leviter ab iis quos è Gallia profectos in hanc plagam diximus, impreſſa. Cum enim illis ignotus [322] gentis fermo,

tened to Dieppe, in order that they might sail thence for New France. But, lo ! suddenly an unexpected obstacle. Their ship belonged to Poutrincourt, a French nobleman; it was, however, subject to the control of two Calvinistic merchants, since they had incurred no light expense toward providing her with equipments. As soon as they heard that members of the Society were to be embarked upon her, they refused to allow her to leave the port. The authority of the Queen was invoked; her commands were reiterated. They answered that they would not refuse admission to any other sort of priests, but that they were unwilling to have anything to do with our men. When Coton saw that the stubbornness of the rascals could not be overcome, he approached the matter by another way. There was a lady distinguished not less for piety than for birth, Antoinette de Guercheville. This woman was as solicitous for the interests of the Mission as for her own; and since she had acquired an uncommon influence among many, because of her reputation for integrity, she quickly collected a large sum of money, by means of which the heretical merchants were repaid the amount which they had spent in equipping the ship. So, although the merchants were disappointed and unwilling, the Fathers were admitted. But, because of the intervening delay, they did not sail until the 26th of January, when the storms of winter caused a raging sea. On this account the voyage was of four months' duration, although ordinarily of two, and was terrible because of disease within and tempests without. Having entered at last the mouth of the St. Lawrence river on the 22nd day of May, on the holy day of Pentecost, they came upon some traces of the Christian religion, which had been superficially impressed by those

nec certum conſtanſque in humo barbara domicilium eſſet, facultas non ſuppetebat erudiendi quos obiter baptizabant : quique priſtinos in mores revoluti, Chriſtianum vix retinebant nomen, illudque popularibus vitiis conſpurcabant. Prima Patribus cura fuit ut ſacellum conſtruerent, perdiſcerent linguam vernaculam, excolerent Gallos, qui è veteri Francia in novam navigaverant. Inſtituta eſt ſolennis ſupplicatio; Chriſtus ſanctiſſimi Sacramenti velo tectus, & quanto fieri potuit maximo apparatu circumvectus, in terræ ſelicis, tot ſanctis poſtea frequentandæ veluti poſſeſſionem auſpicatò venit. Proxima infantibus ſacro lavandis fonte cura eſt data, quorum nonnulli, poſt ſuſceptum ſalutis ſacramentum, ad terram viventium poſſidendam, quaſi gentis totius nomine, demigrarunt. Puellam annos natam novem, oppreſſam gravi morbo, parentes abjecerant. Cum enim artis medicæ prorſus ignara natio fit, ægrotos facile deſperat, neque cibo, aut curatione ulla, juvat. Depoſitam Patres à parentibus poſtularunt, ut expiarent lympha ſalutari. Ultro illis permiſſa eſt, quippe quæ inſtar mortui canis haberetur. Abductam in mapale ſeparatum curavere ſedulo: edoctam, quantum erat neceſſe; baptizatam, ac nona poſt luce mortuam, cœlo intulerunt. Eadem Sociorum caritas lætiorem exitum in juvene ſortita eſt. Ejus pater Membertous, primus omnium, uti narrant, barbarorum, cum è Gallia navigatum illuc fuit, in Chriſtianorum numerum venerat; homo ſtrenuus, & omnium popularium teſ-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

timonio, ceteris longè præſtans animi robore, belli ſcientia, clientelarum multitudine, & glorioſi claritudine cognominis; quippe Magni Imperatoris titulum publico ſuffragio conſecutus. Hunc obtinebat locum Membertous inter Souriquios, qui Acadiam, circa oſtia Laurentiani amnis, incolunt. Ejus filium difficili ægritudine conflictatum P. Biardus inviſit. Miratur nihil triſte in tugurio; non planctum, non flebiles nænias: imo epulum, choream, & duos treſve canes alligatos. Quærit quid hæc ſibi velint. Reſpondent juvenem brevi eſſe moriturum, amicos vocatos: illis epulum parari: funebrem choream poſtea ducendam: canes, quos videbat, interficiendos, placandis mortui Manibus. Exclamavit Pater nequaquam iſta Chriſtianis hominibus convenire, & impias conſuetudines graviter increpuit. Senior, adoleſcentis parens, ignorantiam excuſavit; ceterum ſe ac filium in ipſius eſſe poteſtate; doceret, juberet, imperata facturos. Sacerdos vetuit ne canes interficerentur: ſaltatores importunos amandavit: epuli partem, quæ ſuperſtitionis habere nihil videbatur, permiſit: in primis autem, ne deponeretur penitus ægroti cura prohibuit; imo ſuaſit ut ad Gallorum domicilia, quamvis longè diſjuncta, deportaretur; ſperare ſe, favente Deo, futurum ut convaleſceret. Benignè auditus eſt à Membertoo: delatus æger ad nos fuit, ridentibus, ac bolum tantum tam fubito è faucibus ereptum ſibi dolentibus veneficis, & circulatoribus, quorum ſententiâ conclamatus adoleſcens vivere poſſe negabatur. Ac

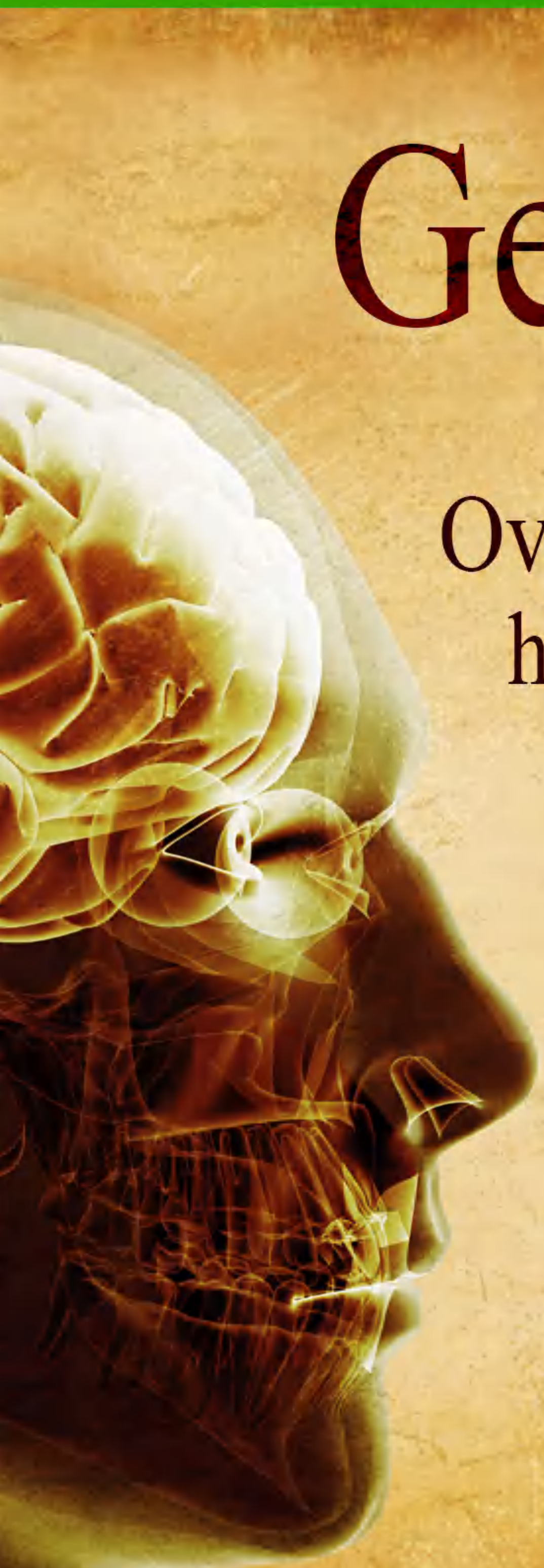
Membertou, who, they say, in the early days of navigation thither from France, first of all the savages became a Christian; he was an energetic man, and, according to the testimony of all his countrymen, far excelled others in vigor of mind, in knowledge of war, in number of dependents, and the distinction of a glorious name, for by public vote he had acquired the title of "Great Chief." This position Membertou held among the Souriquois, who inhabit Acadia about the mouth of the St. Lawrence river. Father Biard visited Membertou's son, who was suffering from a dangerous illness. He was surprised that there was no grief in the wigwam; no lamentations, no tearful dirges; instead, a feast, a dance, and two or three dogs fastened together. He asked what these things meant. They answered that the youth would die in a short time; that the friends had been invited, and for them the banquet was being prepared; that afterwards a funeral dance was to be conducted; and that the dogs which he saw were to be killed to appease the Spirit of the dead boy. The Father exclaimed that these things were quite unfitting for Christian men, and severely censured the impious custom. The parent of the youth excused his ignorance; he said that henceforth he and his son should be under the Father's direction; he begged him to instruct and command them, and said that they would execute his orders. The Priest forbade the killing of the dogs; he dismissed the rude dancers; a part of the repast he allowed, as not devoted to superstitious rites. He insisted that the patient should no longer be neglected; still more, he persuaded them that the boy should be taken to the dwellings of the French, although these were far distant, saying that he hoped, by the favor of God, for his recovery. The

ſane agebat animam, cùm triduo poſt ad Gallorum domicilia pervenit, fractus itinere ac morbo. Patrum tamen arte ac ſtudio, & ſcilicet Dei benignitate, recreatus eſt; nec ipſe tantum in fide catholica confirmatus, ſed ejus capeſſendæ deſiderio complures inflammati.

Incidit aliquanto poſt in morbum pater adoleſcentis, & ad nos ſimiliter deferri voluit, ubi noſtrum in tugurium, atque adeo in unius è Patribus lectum acceptus, piè vitam clauſit; quodque barbaris novum accidit ac moleſtum, illatus eſt in commune Chriſtianæ plebi ſepulcrum: nam ipſi a sepulcris majorum ægerrime divelluntur. Curatum funus illuſtri, ut rerum ferebant anguſtiæ, pompa. Nec honore iſto qualicumque indigna barbari virtus erat, qui etiam ante quàm Chriſtum noſſet, non potuerat adduci ut plures una duceret uxores: id naturæ ac rationi magis conſentaneum arbitratus. Poſt ſuſceptam vero Chriſti Fidem ita vixerat, ut barbaris admirationi eſſet, Chriſtianis exemplo.

Hæc domi geſta. Egreſſi deinde quaſi pomerio præcones Evangelici magnam regionis partem luſtravere. Divina res, ubicumque licuit, facta: impoſitæ manus ægrotis, conciliati munuſculis parentes ac liberi; data Gallis, novas condentibus ſedes, opera; necnon claſſiariis atque vectoribus. Non defuit patientiæ læta ſeges, ac tanta interdum exſtitit annonæ penuria, ut ſingulis hebdomadis certum [323] unicuique demenſum daretur, quod vix ſufficiebat in unum

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

diem, videlicet panis unciæ decem, ſelibra carnis ſale maceratæ, & piſorum, fabarumve aliquantulum. Adhæc, erat ſibi quiſque faber, ſarcinator, piſtor, coquus, lignator, & aquator. Occurrebant interdum Patribus, in his ærumnis, voces illorum, quibus Moſes provinciam explorandæ Chananitidis dederat,* *Terra hæc devorat habitatores ſuos; ibi vidimus monſtra quædam filiorum Enac, de genere Giganteo, quibus comparati, quaſi locuſtæ videbamur.* At ſimul veniebat in mentem oratio Joſue, & Calebi, plena divinæ fiduciæ: *Terra valde bona eſt. Si propitius fuerit Dominus, inducet nos in eam. Neque timeatis populum terræ hujus, Dominus nobiſcum eſt.*

*Num. c. 13. 14.

parents and children were conciliated by means of little gifts; services were rendered to the French who were establishing new homes; nor were the seamen and ships' passengers neglected. There was not lacking a glad harvest for their patience. Meanwhile, so great a scarcity of provisions existed, that for each week [323] a ration was allotted, so scanty that it was hardly sufficient for one day; namely, ten ounces of bread, half a pound of salted meat, and a handful of peas or beans. In addition to this, each man was his own mechanic, mender, miller, cook, hewer of wood, and drawer of water. There occurred sometimes to the Fathers, in the midst of the miseries, the words of those to whom Moses had given the task of reconnoitering Canaan:* *This land . . devoureth its inhabitants; . . there we saw certain monsters of the sons of Enac of the Giant-kind: in comparison of whom, we seemed like locusts.* But at the same time there came into mind the speech of Joshua and of Caleb, full of divine trust: *The land which we have gone round is very good. If the Lord be favorable, he will bring us into it. . . Fear ye not the people of this land, . . the Lord is with us.*

*Num. c. 13, 14.

DOMICILIA SOCIETATIS & MISSIONES IN NOVA FRANCIA.

ET eſſe cum ſervis ſuis, ac militibus Dominum, exitus comprobavit. Nam hoc anno MDCCIII. ineunte, cum hæc ſcribimus, præter Quebecenſe collegium, numerantur in hac *terra deſerta* prius & *invia* triginta & amplius florentiſſimæ cultiſſimæque Miſſiones noſtræ Societatis. Prima in conſpectu Quebeci, decimo ab urbe lapide, Lauretana dicitur. Altera in pago Taduſſaco ſedet: ad ripam fluvii Laurentiani, leucis infra Quebecum LX. verſus ortum. Tres aliæ ſupra Quebecum ipſum, longe procurrunt in Boream, circa lacum S. Joannis: una in eo loco, qui à ſeptem inſulis nomen habet; altera, in pago Chigoutimino; tertia, ſecus amnem Saguenæum. Excoluntur ibi Montagnæi, Papinachii, Miſtaſſini, & aliæ paſſim gentes errabundæ. Jam, ſi verſus obeuntis folis partes & fluminis Laurentiani fontem tendas, occurret in ejus ripâ ſeptentrionali pagus Trium fluminum dictus, quia ibi tria quædam flumina confluunt: abeſt Quebeco ſeptem octove dierum iter. Florebat illic Algonkinorum Miſſio longe pulcherrima, ſed hanc vinum igne vaporatum & ſtillatum, à mercatoribus Europæis, facilem inde quæſtum male captantibus invectum, vehementer labefactavit inducta ebrietate. Penſat hæc damna virtus ac pietas Abnakiſorum.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Triplex apud illos ſtatio collocata una Quebeco non procul, in XLVI. gradu latitudinis, nomine S. Francifci Saleſii & patrocinio inſignita: aliæ duæ funt remotiores; loco nomen eſt Nipiſikouit. Trans amnem Laurentianum ad Meridiem funduntur Iroquæorum quinque nationes. Septem funt apud illos præconum Evangelii domicilia, per centum quinquaginta leucas ſparſa. Ex iis ſex profligata fuerant bello Gallos inter & Iroquæos conflato circa annum MDCLXXXII. Revocata cum religione pax anno MDCCII. omnia priorem in ſtatum reſtituit. In iis Iroquæorum Miſſionibus ea præcipuè floret, quæ à S. Franciſco Xaverio nomen habet, ad Montem-Regalem.

Supra Iroquæos, verſus occaſum & Aquilonem, intra quadrageſimum gradum & XLV. cernere eſt majores duos lacus anguſto freto junctos: alter, iſque amplior, Ilinæorum; alter Huronum dicitur. Hos ingens terræ lingua dividit, cujus in apice ſedet Miſſio S. Ignatii, ſive Miſſilimakinacana. Supra duos iſtos lacus tertius eſt, ambobus major, quem ſuperiorem lacum appellant. Hujus in aditu conſtituta eſt Miſſio S. Mariæ à Saltu. Interjectum inter hunc, & binos inferiores lacus ſpatium occupant Outaouaki, apud quos plurima ſtativa Societas habet. Ejuſmodi arces religionis (ſic enim appellare Miſſiones licet) unde ſuos profert milites, & facra explicat vexilla, tres circa lacum Ilinæorum poſitæ funt, prima inter Puteatamiſos: Miſſio Sancti Joſephi nuncupatur: altera inter Kikarouſos, Maſkoutenſos, & Outagamiſos; S.

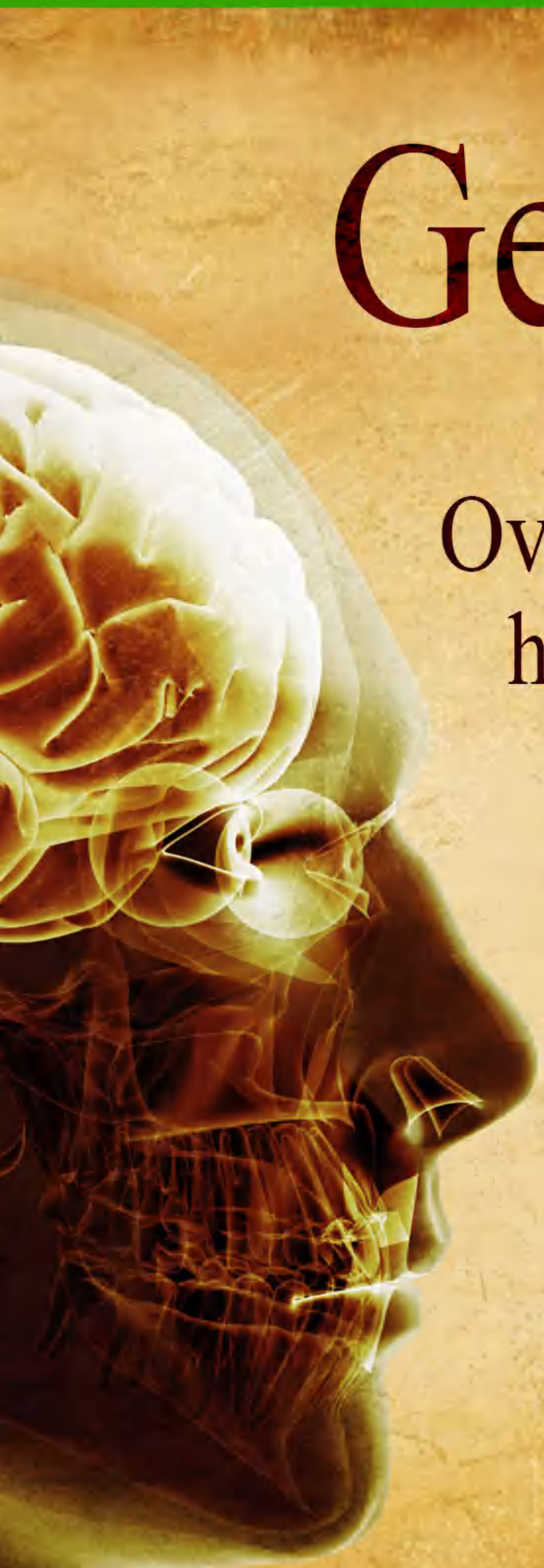
has been established; one located among them, not far from Quebec, on the forty-sixth parallel of latitude, distinguished by the name and patronage of St. Francis de Sales: the other two are more remote, at a place named Nipisikouit. Across the St. Lawrence river, to the South, extend the five nations of the Iroquois. There are among them seven stations of the Evangelists, scattered through a hundred and fifty leagues. Of these, six were destroyed in the war which arose between the French and Iroquois, about the year 1682. Peace, together with the recall of the missionaries, in the year 1702 restored all things to their previous condition.[51] Among these Missions of the Iroquois, that one is especially flourishing which is named for St. Francis Xavier, at Montreal.[52]

Above the Iroquois, toward the west and North, between the fortieth and forty-fifth parallels, one may see two great lakes joined by a narrow strait; the larger one is called the lake of the Ilinois,[53] the other the lake of the Hurons.[54] These are separated by a large peninsula, at the point of which is situated the Mission of St. Ignatius, or Missilimakinac.[55] Above these two lakes there is a third, greater than either, called lake superior. At the entrance of this lake has been established the Mission of Ste. Marie at the Sault.[56] The space between this and two smaller lakes is occupied by the Outaouaki, among whom the Society has many stations. Three such citadels of religion (for thus it is proper to call the Missions), whence she leads forth her soldiers and unfurls her sacred standards, have been located about the lake of the Ilinois: the first, among the Puteatamis, and called the Mission of St. Joseph; another, among the Kikarous, Maskoutens, and Outagamies, and possessing the name of St. Francis Xavier:[57] the third,

Franciſci Xaverii nomen obtinet: tertia inter Oumiamiſos, Angeli Cuſtodis. Infra memoratos lacus, ſupra ipſam Floridam, vaſtiſſimos pererrant campos Ilinæi. Ibi ampliſſima ſtatio, cui nomen ab immaculata Virginis Matris conceptione impoſitum, tres in Miſſiones ſecatur, & ad fluvium uſque Miſſiſipum procurrit. Inſidet ejuſdem fluminis ripis miſſio Baiogulana, in trigeſimo primo gradu latitudinis: demum ultima protenditur ſecundum eundem amnem verſus Mexicanum ſinum. Hæc viſum eſt enucleare paulo diſtinctius, & quaſi ſub uno ſtatim aſpectu ponere, ut intelligatur quò ſingula referenda ſint, quæ poſtea de Nova Francia narrabuntur.

Reſtat ignota Europæis adhuc pars Canadæ imenſa, ultra Miſſiſipum fluvium, clementiori ſubjecta cœlo, frequens incolis, armentis frugibuſque læta; vitæ veræ ac ſalutis expers. Hæc generoſos Chriſti milites vocat. Nec non altera [324] longe iſti diſſimilis, quæ rigidis circa Hudſonium ſinum, à gradu LV. ad LX. aut LXX. ſubjecta ſeptentrionibus, nivibus ac pruinis demerſa, tanto æquiùs implorat opem, quanto gravioribus incommodis conflictatur. Hic Societas ante annos paucos prima cœpit figere veſtigia. Illuceſcet illa, ſpero, dies, cum obvallatum periculis ac laboribus iter eadem perrumpet. Non ſine magno molimine clauſtra Tartari, oppreſſas injuſta ſervitute animas retinentis, perfringuntur; neque illa ipſa, tot florens modo coloniis, Miſſio Canadica ſtatim ſuam eſt maturitatem adepta. Ægrè per ſexdecim

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

annos tanquam in ſalebris hæſit, nec ſuam quandam nacta formam eſt, niſi anno ſeculi ſuperioris quinto & vigemo, cùm ſe aliquando ex illis anguſtiis explicuit, P. Petri Cotoni, cui ſua debebat primordia, beneficio, ut ſexta Pars Hiſtoriæ fuſius exponet.

Nunc ærumnarum ac periculorum plenos natales referimus laborioſæ Miſſionis, quæ vix nata, in ipſis cunis per Anglos propemodùm extincta eſt.

road; indeed, it did not take shape until 1625, when it was extricated from its perplexities by the aid of Father Peter Coton, to whom it owed its origin, as the sixth Part of this History will more fully explain.

Now we return to the natal days, full of hardships and dangers, of the toilsome Mission, which, scarcely born, was almost exterminated in its cradle by the English.

MISSIO CANADENSIS AB ANGLIS PROTURBATA.

SOCIIS illic degentibus venerant auxilio Idibus Maii anni MDCXIII. Pater Quintinus, & Frater Gilbertus Thetus, regio diplomate inſtructi, quo facultas ipſis dabatur novi domicilii commodo loco ædificandi. Gallos reperiunt incumbentes in condendam urbem, & periculi, quod inſtabat, ignaros. Angli paucis ante annis occupaverant Virginiam. Hæc Americæ ſeptentrionalis ad ortum portio maritima, inter Floridam Novamque Franciam ſita, triceſimo ſexto, ſeptimo, & octavo gradibus ſubſternitur. Eò cum tenderent Angli æſtivis anni MDCXIII. menſibus, & inſcii locorum errarent, ob exortam caliginem, quæ huic mari denſiſſima ſolet per eos menſes incubare, paulatim delapſi ſunt ad littus, ubi Galli conſederant, haud procul portu Sancti Salvatoris. Poſtquam cognoverunt Gallicas naves ibi conſiſtere, arma expediunt, & in portum invehuntur. Interea Galli ancipiti opinione ſuſpenſi, amicos an hoſtes cenſerent, quos recta in ſuam ſtationem ventus inferebat, eventum trepidi opperiebantur. Brevi, quinam eſſent patuit. Angli facto impetu in Gallicum navigium, paucis inſtructum propugnatoribus, ceteris ad condenda domicilia digreſſis, id nullo negotio expugnant.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

UNUS È SOCIETATE INTERFICITUR; ALII CANADA EJICIUNTUR.

PRIMO in conflictu Gilbertus Thetus, domeſticæ rei adiutor è Societate, confoſſus lethali plaga, poſtridie religioſa morte occubuit. Ceteri Patres qui ſtabant in littore, in poteſtatem Argalli, prætoris Angli, venerunt. Ille, dum Gallicæ navis prædam & ſupellectilem recenſet, subduxit clam è Sauſſæii, navis Gallicæ gubernatoris, qui huic expeditioni præerat, ſcrinio regium diploma, cujus fide tota novæ coloniæ ratio nitebatur. Mox ipſum Sauſſæium è littore ſubeuntem adortus, quærit ex eo quo jure, cujus auctoritate, novas tam prope Virginiam ſedes moliatur. Laudavit Sauſſæius regium diploma, quod ſe in capſis rite conſcriptum habere dixit. Ad eas ubi ventum eſt, vidit integras, & obſeratas, ſuiſque omnia digeſta locis agnovit, diploma nullum apparuit. Tum Argallus, vultu & voce ad ſeveritatem compoſitis, fugitivos & prædones conclamat, ac necem commeruiſſe pronunciat, ſimulque navim ſuis diripiendam tradit. Illum interea Patres obſecrant ut victis benignè conſulat, quibus objici nihil noxæ poſſit aliud, quàm quod in pacato ſolo fuerint nimium ſecuri: auctoritatem Regis Galliæ non dubiam ac voluntatem teſtantur. Prætor probè ſibi conſcius vera narrari, comiter eos audivit, & omnibus poteſtatem

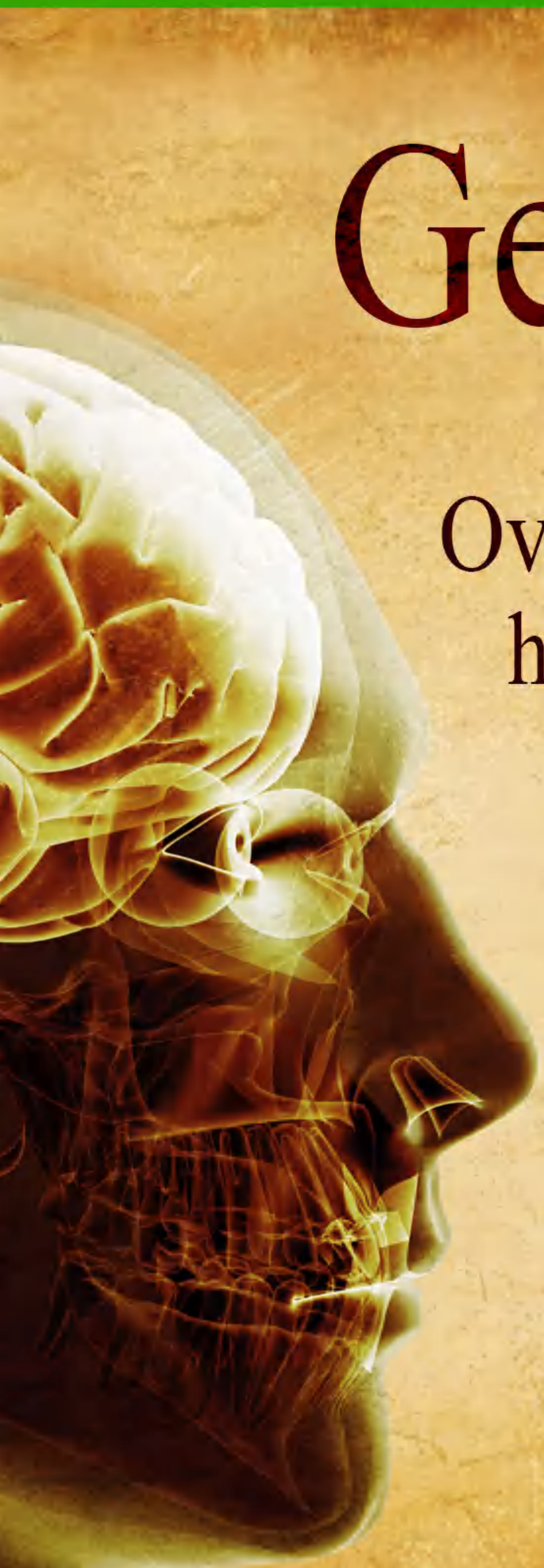
ONE OF THE MEMBERS OF THE SOCIETY IS KILLED; THE OTHERS ARE EXPELLED FROM CANADA.

IN THE FIRST onset, Gilbert du Thet, a household assistant of the Society, was stricken with a mortal wound, and on the following day piously departed this life. The rest of the Fathers, who were standing on the shore, were captured by Argall, the English commander.[63] This man, while he was taking an inventory of the plunder and equipment of the French ship, surreptitiously removed from the trunk of Saussaye, the captain of the French vessel, and commander of the expedition, the royal commission upon whose authority all the proceedings of the new colony were based. Soon meeting Saussaye himself, returning from the shore, Argall asked him by what right, by whose authority, he was founding a new colony so near Virginia. Saussaye cited the royal commission, which he asserted that he had, duly drawn up, in one of his trunks. When they came to these, he saw them untouched and locked, and all things disposed in their proper places; but no commission appeared. Thereupon Argall, changing his countenance and voice to severity, pronounced them runaways and pirates, and declared that they deserved death; while at the same time he delivered over the ship to his men to be plundered. Meanwhile the Fathers besought him to adopt mild measures toward the vanquished, against whom no other fault could be charged than that, in a peaceful situation, they had been too careless; they testified that the authority and favor of the

in Galliam redeundi fecit. Duas in naviculas infelix turba imponitur, quarum una curſum in Galliam rectà dirigeret; altera cum aliquot Anglis ſolveret in Virginiam, inde Franciam petitura. Hanc PP. Biardus & Quintinus, illam P. Maſſæus, & Sauſſæius conſcenderunt. Utriuſque fors longè diſpar fuit. Quæ Sauſſæium & P. Maſſæum vehebat dum oram maritimam legit, annonâ, nautis, armamentis deſtituta, incidit in geminas naves reditum in Galliam adornantes. Jungit ſe illis læta, cumque fuis vectoribus Maclovium, Britanniæ Aremoricæ oppidum, paucis diebus tenuit.

Interim Argallus, claſſis Anglicæ præfectus, Patres Biardum & Quintinum deducturus in Virginiam, ut conſtitutum fuerat, paululum iis præivit cum ſua navi prætoria. Virginiam obtinebat Anglus ferox, nomini Gallico, ac Societati noſtræ [325] perinfenſus. Ubi adventare Jeſuitas audivit, vociferatur perdendos homines improbiſſimos, buſta pietatis ac religionis. Argallus contra nitebatur, ſeque vivo nihil moleſtiæ damnive Patribus inferendum affirmabat: hanc enim ipſis dederat fidem; & regium diploma, cujus auctoritate colonia Gallica in Novam Franciam deducebatur, protulit. Hoc diplomate inflammatus homo furioſus, exturbandos è Nova Francia Gallos clamat. In hanc ſententiam Angli proceres iverunt. Jubetur Argallus viam remetiri; Gallos, quicumque ſupereſſent, ejicere, domicilia evertere, & æquare ſolo. Rediit: arces in ora Canadenſi extructas incendit, omnia delevit, ac

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

naves duas in Regio Portu deprehenſas, invaſit.

Dum hæc in Canada geruntur, naves Anglicæ, præeuntem Argallum ſecutæ, aliæ procul à Virginia ventorum vi abreptæ; aliæ undis hauſtæ ſunt. Una, cui Turnellus Anglus præerat, & qua Patres Quintinus ac Biardus vehebantur, continentibus ſexdecim dierum procellis vexata, in Azores, Luſitanorum ad Africæ littus infulas, celerrimè defertur. Hic vero novum exoritur periculum. Turnellus pœnam metuens, quòd Societatis ſacerdotes per ſummam immanitatem domicilio avulſos ſpoliatoſque ſecum traheret, indigniſque habuiſſet modis, de illorum nece agitare conſilia cœpit. Satius denique illi viſum ad eorum clementiam & humanitatem, quam in graviſſimis injuriis perſpexerat, confugere. Operam tamen dedit, ne intraret portum; ſed ſtante in ancoris navigio, neceſſariam annonam immiſsâ ſcaphâ pararet. Contra quàm ſperaverat accidit. Secundo enim vento impulſus, portum quamlibet invitus reluctanſque ſubiit. Noſtri de illo, quamvis non ita merito, ne verbum quidem ullum, quo accuſaretur, interpoſuere: læti quod hoſtem ita ſervaſſent. Agnovit beneficium gubernator Anglus; ac deinceps ſæpenumero cum ſumma Patrum laude prædicavit. Id vero multo fecit impenſiùs, cùm tempeſtate ad Angliæ urbem Penbrochium projectus, ejus oppidi magiſtratibus movit ſuſpicionem maritimi latronis, quòd & Francicâ veheretur navi, neque ſcriptam auctoritatem proferret, qua ſuam navigationem tueretur. Aſſeveranti ſe à

the English councilors agreed. Argall was ordered to retrace his path; to expel those of the French who remained; to destroy their buildings, and level them with the ground. He returned, burned the forts built upon the Canadian coast, destroyed everything, and seized two ships which he found at Port Royal.[65]

While these things were taking place in Canada, of the English ships which were following the lead of Argall some were driven far from Virginia by the violence of the wind; others were swamped by the waves. One, which the Englishman Turnell[66] commanded, and in which Fathers Quentin and Biard were being conveyed, after being driven continuously for sixteen days by tempests, was quickly borne to the Azores, islands on the coast of Africa belonging to the Portuguese. But here a new danger arose. Turnell, fearing punishment because he was carrying with him and was holding under unjust conditions priests of the Society, who had been torn from their homes and robbed with the greatest brutality, began to consider plans for making way with them. Finally it seemed better to him to take refuge in their clemency and mildness, which he had observed amid the most grievous injuries. Nevertheless, he took measures that they should not enter the port, thinking that while the ship stood at anchor he might procure the necessary provisions by sending in a small boat. The contrary to what he had expected happened. For, impelled by an inshore breeze, he entered the harbor, although unwillingly and reluctantly. Our friends, contrary to his deserts, interposed not even a word by which he might be accused, rejoicing because they had, in this manner, saved an enemy. The English captain rec-

prætore ſuo Argallo tempeſtate divulſum, fides non habebatur. In tanto diſcrimine ſacerdotes duos Societatis teſtes citavit, quos haberet in navi, & quorum incorrupta fides nemini venire poſſet in dubium. Cum Patres interrogati rem ita ſe habere confirmaſſent, periculo liberatus eſt. Reddidit quam debebat illorum humanitati vicem; utque ipſis non ſolum eſſet impune, ſed etiam ut à magiſtratu honor haberetur, curavit. Certior interim factus Regis Chriſtianiſſimi orator de Patrum navigatione difficili, & in Angliam adventu, egit cum Angliæ Rege de remittendis illis in Galliam. Quo annuente, Ambianum decimo, quàm fuerant capti, menſe ad Socios læti ſoſpiteſque pervenerunt.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

APPENDIX.

Miſſiones Societatis Ieſv in America Septentrionali Anno M.DCC.X. [961]

APUD Abnaquæos miſſiones. *Aux Abnaquis.*
S. Angeli Cuſtodis miſſio. *De l'Ange Gardien.*
Baiogulana miſſ. *Baiogula.*
Chigutiminiana miſſ. *Chigoutimini.*
S. Franciſci Saleſii miſſ. *De S. François de Sales.*
S. Franciſci Xaverii miſſ. *De S. François Xavier.*
Huronica reſ. *Aux Hurons.*
S. Ignatii miſſ. *De S. Ignace.*
Immaculatæ Conceptionis miſſ. *De l'Immaculée Conception.*
Ad ſeptem Infulas miſſ. *Aux Sept Isles.*
S. Joſephi miſſ. *De S. Joſeph.*
Apud Ilinæos miſſiones. *Aux Ilinois.*
Apud Iroquæos miſſiones. *Aux Iroquois.*
Lauretana miſſio. *De Lorette.*
Ad ripas, & oſtium fluvii Miſſiſſipi miſſiones. *Aux bords, & a l'embouchure du Miſſiſſipi.*
[962] Montis-regalis reſ. *Mon*[*t*]*-real.*
Nipiſikouitana miſſio. *Nipiſikovit.*
Apud Outakouacos miſſiones. *Aux Outakovacs.*
Saguenæa miſſio. *Du Saguenai.*
Saltenſis miſſio. *Du Sault de Sainte Marie.*
In ſilvis miſſiones. *Dans les foreſts.*
Taduſſacenſis miſſ. *De Tadouſſak.*
Triſluviana miſſ. *Aux trois Rivieres.*

Numerantur Socii . . 42.

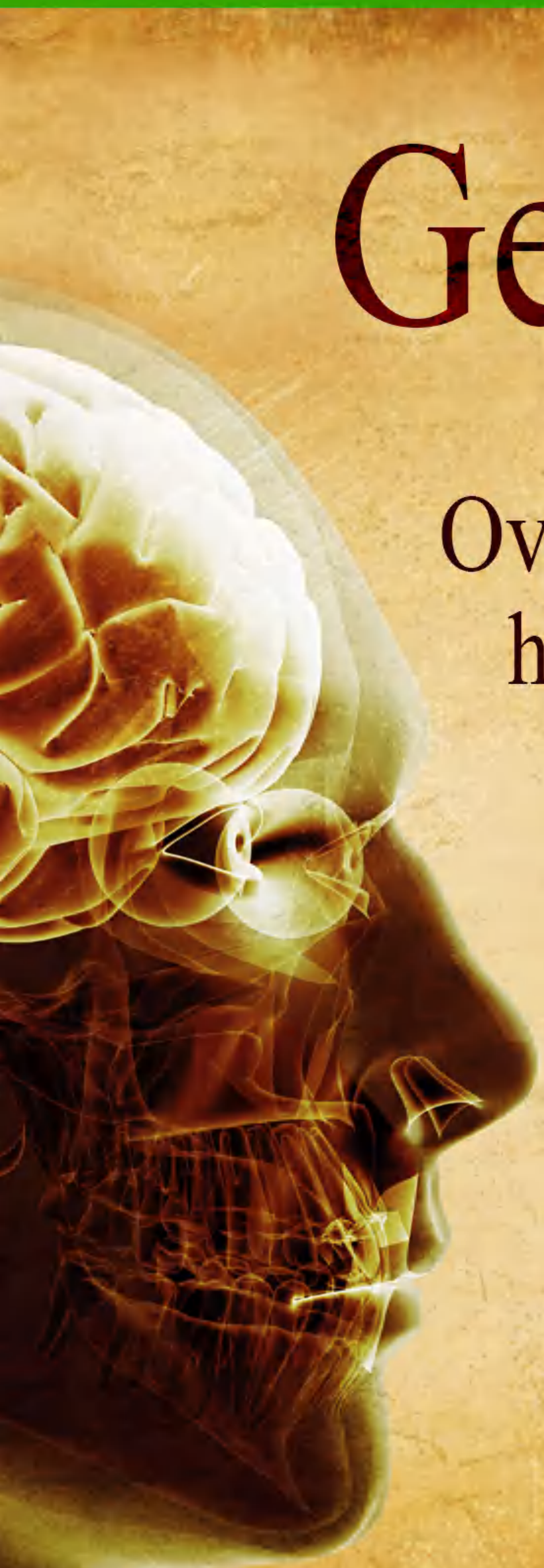
APPENDIX.

Missions of the Society of Jesus in North America in the Year 1710. [961]

MISSIONS among the Abenakis.
Mission of the Holy Guardian Angel.
Baiogula mission.
Chigoutimini mission.
Mission of St. Francis de Sales.
Mission of St. Francis Xavier.
Huron residence.
Mission of St. Ignatius.
Mission of the Immaculate Conception.
Mission at the seven Islands.
Mission of St. Joseph.
Missions among the Ilinois.
Missions among the Iroquois.
Mission of Lorette.
Missions on the banks and at the mouth of the Mississippi river.
[962] Residence of Montreal.
Nipisikouit mission.
Missions among the Outakouacs.
Saguenay mission.
Mission of Sault de Sainte Marie.
Forest missions.
Tadoussac mission.
Mission at Three Rivers.

Number of brethren 42

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

DE

REGIONE ET MORIBUS

CANADENSIUM

SEU BARBARORUM NOVÆ FRANCIÆ

Auctore JOSEPHO JUVENCIO, Societatis Jeſu, Sacerdote.

Ex Hiſtoriæ Soc. Jeſu Lib. xv. Parte v, impreſſa

ROMÆ:

Ex Typographia Georgii Plachi

M. D. CC. X.

CONCERNING THE

COUNTRY AND MANNERS

OF THE CANADIANS,

OR THE SAVAGES OF

NEW FRANCE

By Joseph Jouvency, a Priest of the Society of Jesus.

Printed from the History of the Society of Jesus, Book xv., Part v.

ROME:

Printing House of Giorgio Placko

1710.

[3] Tabula Rerum

Pag.

I FLUMINA *Novæ Franciæ; ſoli natura; feræ, piſces, aves, &c.* 5

II *Canadenſium domus & res familiaris; morbi; ægrorum cura & mortuorum* . 16

III *Belli gerendi ratio; arma; crudelitas in captivos* 27

IV *Indoles animi: corporis cultus; cibi, convivia; ſupellex; religio, & ſuperſtitiones* . 33

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[344 §. x.] De regione ac moribus Canadenſium, ſeu barbarorum Novæ Franciæ.

FLUMINA NOVÆ FRANCIÆ; SOLI NATURA; FERÆ, PISCES, AVES, &C.

DUO funt in Nova Francia majores fluvii. Unus ab indigenis Canada nominatus, & à quo tota regio nomen traxit, nunc fluvius Sancti Laurentii dicitur, & ab occaſu in ortum ampliſſimo fluit alveo. Alter, cui nomen Miſſiſipus, per vaſta, & ignota magnam adhuc partem, terrarum ſpatia fertur à Septentrione in Meridiem. Habent hoc ſingulare hujus regionis fluvii, quòd certis in locis ex editiore ſolo præcipitant in humiliorem planitiem ingenti cum ſtrepitu. Ea loca faltus vocant Franci. Catadupa recte dixeris, qualia in Nilo celebrantur. Aqua tota fluminis, in morem arcuati fornicis, ita ſæpe cadit, ut infra ſuſpenſum altè amnem ſicco veſtigio tranſire liceat. Barbari, cum huc ventum eſt, ſuas naviculas, è levi compactas cortice, imponunt humeris, & in placidam fluminis, alveo depreſſiore fluentis, partem eas deportant, cum ſarcinulis. Urbs novæ Franciæ primaria Kebecum nuncupatur, S. Laurentii fluvio impoſita. Cœlo ſalubri tota regio utitur; at hyeme frigida, & diuturna vexatur. Hanc efficit partim fluminum & lacuum crebritas; partim opacitas & am-

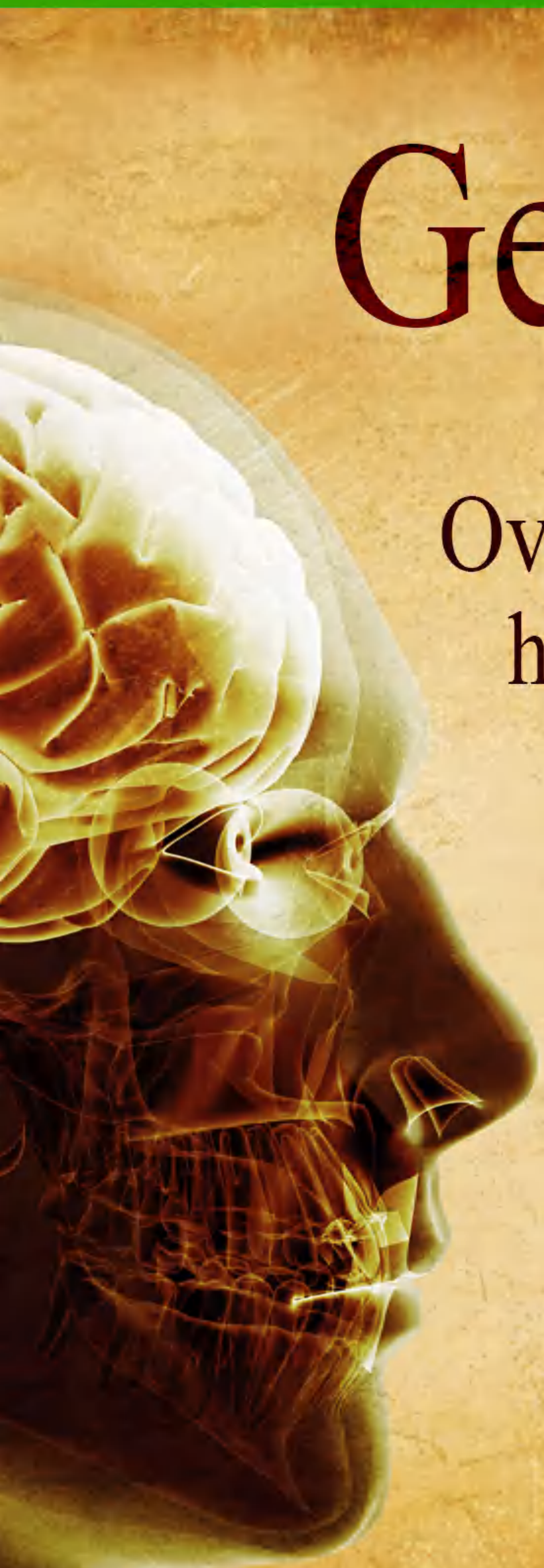
[344 § x.] Concerning the country and manners of the Savages of New France.

RIVERS OF NEW FRANCE; NATURE OF THE SOIL; WILD BEASTS, FISH, BIRDS, ETC.

THERE are two great rivers in New France. One, called by the natives Canada, a name thence extended to the whole country, is now called the river St. Lawrence, and flows in a very broad channel from west to east. The other, named Mississippi, flows from North to South, through vast regions, for the most part still unknown. The rivers of this land are remarkable because in certain places they are precipitated with a great uproar from the higher to the lower levels. The French call those places water-falls. You might justly call them cataracts, such as are famous in the case of the Nile. The water of an entire river often falls in the form of an arch, in such fashion that it is possible to walk dry-shod beneath the stream which rushes overhead. The savages, when they come to such a spot, shoulder their boats, which are constructed of light bark, and carry them, together with the baggage, to the calm portion of the river flowing below. The chief city of new France is called Kebec, and is situated on the St. Lawrence river. The whole country possesses a healthful climate, but is harassed by a cold and long winter. This is caused partly by the frequency of the rivers and lakes; partly by the thickness and great extent of the forests, which diminish the force of the sun's heat; finally, by the abundance of snow

plitudo nemorum, quæ vim folis calidam infringunt; denique nivium copia, quibus terra tres quatuorve menſes, in iis locis quæ ab Boream propius accedunt, & eidem ac vetus Gallia parallelo ſubjacent, continenter inhorreſcit. Humus omnium arborum plantarumque feraciſſima, præſertim ubi exciſæ ſilvæ locum culturæ majorem præbuerunt. Quadrupedes eædem, quæ in Europa: nonnullæ regionis propriæ ſunt, ut alces. Magnam belluam indigenæ appellant. Id nominis invenit à mole corporis: bovem enim æquat magnitudine. Mulum capite refert; cervum cornibus, pedibus, & cauda. Eam canibus immiſſis barbari agitant; defatigatam conficiunt jaculis & miſſilibus. Si deſunt venatici canes, ipſi vicem illorum obeunt. Per medias quippe nives incredibili celeritate gradiuntur, ac ne corporis pondus veſtigia pedum altius in nivem deprimat, ſubſternunt plantis, inſeruntque pedibus, lata reticula, illis ſimillima, quibus pilam luſores vulgò pulſant. Hæc reticula, ſpatium nivis ac foli fatis magnum amplexa, currentes facile ſuſtinent. Alces vero crura exilia defigens alte in nivem, ægrè ſe expedit. Illius carnibus veſcuntur, teguntur pelle, ungula poſterioris ſiniſtri pedis ſanantur. Huic ungulæ mira quædam & multiplex virtus ineſt, medicorum celeberrimorum teſtimonio commendata. Valet in primis adverſus morbum comitialem, ſive admoveatur pectori, qua parte cor micat; ſive indatur palæ annuli, quem digitus lævæ minimo proximus geſtet; ſive demum teneatur

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

in ejuſdem ſiniſtræ vola, in pugnum contracta. Nec minorem vim habet ad ſanandam pleuritidem, capitis vertigines, & ſexcentos alios, ſi credimus expertis, morbos.

Alterum animantis genus illic notiſſimum & frequentiſſimum eſt fiber, cujus pelle, cum Europæis mercibus mutanda, commercii Canadenſis ratio fere tota conſtat. Color caſtaneæ colorem imitatur; modus cor[po]ris idem, qui exigui vervecis: curti pedes & ad natandum compoſiti, nam in aquis perinde ac in terra degit; cauda glabra, craſſa & plana, quæ natanti pro gubernaculo ſit: dentes duo, majores ceteris, ex ore utrimque prominent: iis tanquam gladio & ferra utuntur fibri ad arbores exſcindendas, cum domos extruunt; in iis enim fabricandis mira pollent induſtria. Eas ponunt ad lacuum fluviorumve ripas: muros è ſtipitibus componunt, interjecto ceſpite uliginoſo ac tenaci, calcis inſtar; vix ut multa vi effringi opus & convelli poſſit. Tota caſæ fabrica variis contignationibus diſtinguitur: infima è tranſverſis lignis craſſioribus conſtat, inſtratis deſuper ramis, ac relicto foramine & oſtiolo, per quod in fluvium ſubire, cum videtur, poſſint: Hæc modice ſupra fluminis aquam exſtat, aliæ aſſurgunt altius, in eaſque, ſi fluvius intumeſcens imum tabulatum vicerit, ſe receptant. In una è ſuperioribus contignationibus cubant; præbet molle ſtratum alga ſiccior, & arborum muſcus, quo ſe tutantur a frigore; in altera penum habent, & proviſa in hyemem cibaria. Ædificium fornicato

in the hollow of the left hand, clenched in the fist. Nor does it have less power in the cure of pleurisy, dizziness, and, if we may believe those familiar with it, six hundred other diseases.

Another well-known and common sort of animal there, is the beaver; its skins, which are exchanged for European merchandise, being the basis of almost the entire system of Canadian commerce. Its color resembles that of the chestnut; the shape of its body is like that of a small wether; its legs are short and formed for swimming; its tail, which it uses as a rudder while swimming, is smooth, thick and flat; two teeth, larger than the others, project from its mouth on each side; these, the beavers use like a sword and a saw in cutting down trees when they build their houses, for in the construction of these they exhibit wonderful industry. They locate them on the banks of lakes or rivers; they build walls of logs, placing between them wet and sticky sods in the place of mortar, so that the work can, even with great violence, scarcely be torn apart and destroyed. The entire house is divided into several stories; the lowest is composed of thicker cross-beams, with branches strewn upon them, and provided with a hole or small door through which they can pass into the river whenever they wish; this story extends somewhat above the water of the river, while the others rise higher, into which they retire if the swelling stream submerges the lowest floor. They sleep in one of the upper stories; a soft bed is furnished by dry seaweed and tree moss, with which they protect themselves from the cold; on another floor they have their store-room, and food provided for winter. The building is covered with a dome-shaped roof. Thus they pass the winter, for in sum-

tecto clauditur. Sic hyemem exigunt: nam æſtate, opacum in ripis frigus captant, aut undis immerſi calores æſtivos fugiunt. In una fæpe domo ingens, & multorum capitum familia ſtabulatur. Quod ſi loci premuntur anguſtiis, diſcedunt juniores ultro, & ſua ſibi domicilia moliuntur. In eam curam incumbunt ſub prima autumni frigora, & mutuas ſibi invicem operas commodant, tum ad ſecanda ligna, tum ad comportanda, ita ut plures uni eidemque ſuccedant oneri, & ingentia ramalia, nemoriſque ſtragem, devehant. Si quem fluvium nanciſcuntur ad ſuos accommodatum uſus, non tamen fatis alto gurgite, ſtruunt aggerem coercendis aquis, donec ad idoneam altitudinem aſſurgant. Ac primo quidem arbores grandiores arrodendo dejiciunt: deinde tranſverſas ab una ripa ducunt ad alteram. Duplicem verſum & ordinem arborum faciunt; relicto inter illas obliquè ſic poſitas ſpatio ſex fere pedum, quod referciunt cæmentis, argilla, ramis, tam ſolerter, nihil ut perfectius à ſummo architecto expectes. Operis longitudo major minorve eſt, pro fluvii, quem coercere volunt, modo. Ducenûm aliquando paſſuum ejuſmodi aggeres reperti. At, ſi amnis plus juſto intumeſcit, diffringunt aliquam molis partem, ac tantum emittunt aquæ, quantum ſatis videtur.

Ut feris ſilvæ, ſic piſcibus abundant flumina. Unus eſt in Iroquæorum lacu, de quo nihil à priſcis legitur proditum ſcriptoribus. Cauſarus ab indigenis vocatur: octo pedes longus, aliquando decem. Craſſi-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

tudo, humani femoris; color leucophæus, candido tamen propior; ſquamis totus horret tam duris, tamque validè conſertis, ut aciem pugionis, & haſtilium, excludant. Caput amplum, & cranio præduro, tanquam caſſide, munitum. Hinc piſcis armati nomen illi à Gallis inditum. Et vero perpetua cum aliis piſcibus bella gerit, quorum exitio paſcitur. Pro telo roſtrum immane gerit, humani brachii longitudine, gemino dentium ordine inſtructum. Hoc venabulo non ſolum reliquos mactat piſces, verum etiam avibus, cum mutare dapes cupit, inſidiatur & illudit. Eam ob rem occultat ſe inter carecta: roſtrum exertat aquis, ac pauliſper diducit. Sic perſtat immotus donec accedant volucres, & incautæ roſtro inſideant, arundinem aut virgultum ratæ: continuo perfidus inſidiator, miſellarum pedes contracto roſtro ſtringit, & in gurgitem demerſas vorat.

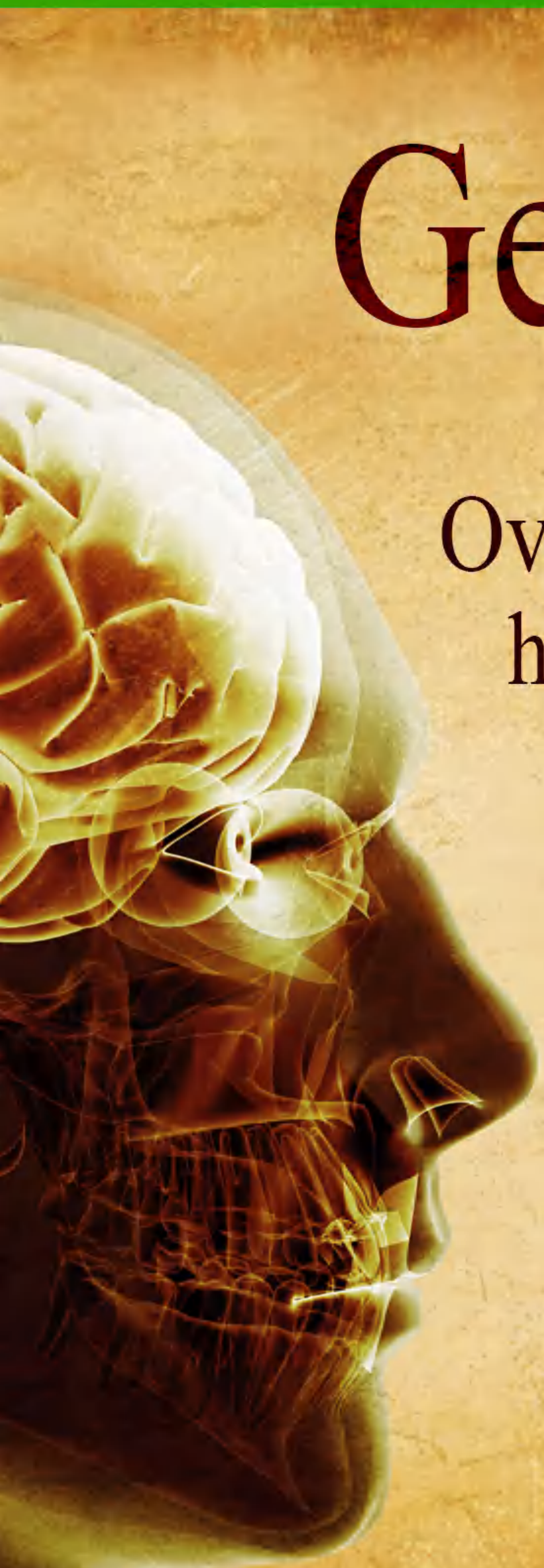
Non minor volucrum eſt copia, quàm piſcium. Certis menſibus palumbes è ſilvis prorumpunt in agros tanto numero, ut arborum ramos prægravent; quibus poſtquam inſederunt noctu, facile capiuntur, & barbaras menſas regali ferculo cumulant. Præterea in vaſtiſſimo ſinu, in quem evolvit ſe flumen ſancti Laurentii, cernitur exigua infula, ſeu potius biceps ſcopulus: inſulam volucrum dicunt. Tot enim eò convolant è finitimo pelago, ut inire numerum nequeas. Indigenæ fuſtibus prædam non difficilem comminuunt, aut pedibus conculcant; cymbaſque lautis dapibus, & inemptis [345] plenas referunt. Ludunt

together that they turn the edge of a knife or the point of a spear. The head is large, and protected by an exceedingly hard skull, like a helmet. Hence the name of "armored fish" has been given it by the French. It carries on perpetual war with, and feeds upon, other fishes. For a weapon it carries an immense beak, of the length of a man's arm and furnished with a double row of teeth. With this hunting-spear it not only devours other fishes, but also, whenever it wishes to vary its diet, deceives and ensnares birds. For this latter purpose it hides itself among the sedge; it projects its beak from the water and opens it slightly. It thus remains motionless until the birds approach and thoughtlessly perch upon the beak, deeming it a reed or a bush; then the treacherous ensnarer seizes the feet of the unfortunate birds by closing its beak, and, dragging them into the water, devours them.[68]

The birds are fully as abundant as the fishes. During certain months of the year the pigeons sally forth from the woods into the open country in such great numbers that they overload the branches of the trees. When they have settled upon the trees at night they are easily captured, and the savages heap their tables with royal abundance. Besides this, in the huge gulf into which the river saint Lawrence flows may be seen a small island, or rather a double rock; they call it the isle of birds.[69] For so many congregate there from the neighboring ocean that it is impossible to count their numbers. The natives make an easy prey of them with clubs, or by trampling them under foot, and bring back their canoes filled with sumptuous food acquired without price. [345] Everywhere may be seen, sporting in the water, geese, ducks, herons, cranes, swans, coots and other

in aquis paſſim anferes, anates, ardeæ, grues, olores, fulicæ; & aves aliæ, victum ex undis petere ſolitæ. Peculiare quiddam habet una, gallinæ ſimilis, ſi molem ſpectes; pennis in tergo nigricantibus, ſub alvo candidis. Pedum alter unguibus aduncis armatur; alter digitos levi & continua pelle junctos habet, qualis eſt anatum; hoc natat, illo piſces trahit & eviſcerat.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

CANADENSIUM DOMUS & RES FAMILIARIS; MORBI; ÆGRORUM CURA & MORTUORUM.

JAM, ſi mores & indolem gentis requiras, partim vagi degunt, in ſilvis per hyemem, quò venationis uberioris vocat ſpes; æſtate, ad amnium ripas, ubi præbet facilem annonam piſcatus: aliqui pagos incolunt. Cafas fabricantur infixis humi perticis: latera corticibus intexunt; pellibus, muſco, ramis operiunt faſtigia. In media caſa focus: in ſummo tecto foramen, emiſſarium fumi. Is ægre eluctatus totam, ut plurimum, caſam ſic opplet, ut coactis habitare in hoc fumo advenis fæpe oculorum acies obtundatur, & hebeſcat: barbari, durum genus & his aſſuetum incommodis, rident. Domeſticæ rei cura, & quidquid in familia laboris eſt, imponitur feminis. Illæ domos figunt, ac refigunt; aquam, & ligna devehunt, cibos apparant: vicem & locum mancipiorum, opificum, & jumentorum, implent. Venationis & belli cura, virorum eſt. Hinc gentis ſolitudo, & paucitas. Mulieres enim, ceteroquin haud infecundæ, his diſtrictæ laboribus, neque maturos edere queunt fetus, neque alere jam editos: itaque aut abortum patiuntur, aut partus recentes deſtituunt, aquationi, lignationi, ceteriſque operibus intentæ; vix ut trigeſimus quiſque infans adoleſcat. Accedit rei medicæ inſcitia, cujus ignoratio facit ut è morbis paulo gravioribus raro emergant.

HOMES AND HOUSEHOLD ECONOMY OF THE CANADIANS; DISEASES; TREATMENT OF THE SICK AND OF THE DEAD.

NOW, if you inquire concerning the customs and character of this people, I will reply that a part of them are nomads, wandering during the winter in the woods, whither the hope of better hunting calls them — in the summer, on the shores of the rivers, where they easily obtain their food by fishing; while others inhabit villages. They construct their huts by fixing poles in the ground; they cover the sides with bark, the roofs with hides, moss and branches. In the middle of the hut is the hearth, from which the smoke escapes through an opening at the peak of the roof. As the smoke passes out with difficulty, it usually fills the whole hut, so that strangers compelled to live in these cabins suffer injury and weakening of the eyes; the savages, a coarse race, and accustomed to these discomforts, ridicule this. The care of household affairs, and whatever work there may be in the family, are placed upon the women. They build and repair the wigwams, carry water and wood, and prepare the food; their duties and position are those of slaves, laborers and beasts of burden. The pursuits of hunting and war belong to the men. Thence arise the isolation and numerical weakness of the race. For the women, although naturally prolific, cannot, on account of their occupation in these labors, either bring forth fully-developed offspring, or properly nourish them after they have been brought forth; therefore they either suffer

Duos maximè fontes morborum ſtatuunt: unum ex ipſa ægrotantis mente ortum, quæ deſideret quidpiam, ac tandiu corpus ægrum vexet, dum re deſiderata potiatur. Putant enim ineſſe in hominum unoquoque innata quædam deſideria, ſæpe ipſis ignota, quibus ſingulorum felicitas contineatur. Ad ejuſmodi deſideria & innatas appetitiones cognoſcendas adhibent hariolos, quibus hanc divinitus conceſſam facultatem arbitrantur, ut animorum intimos receſſus pervideant. Illi, quodcumque primum occurrit, aut ex quo fieri quæſtum aliquem poſſe ſuſpicantur, ab ægro deſiderari pronunciant. Nec dubitant parentes, amici, & conſanguinei ægrotantis, quidquid illud fit, quantivis pretii, comparare ac largiri ægro, nunquam poſtea repoſcendum. Ille dono fruitur, & lucri partem hariolis aſpergit; ac fæpe poſtridie vita cedit. Vulgo tamen relevantur ægroti, quippe levibus tentati morbis: nam in gravioribus timidiores ſunt iſti præſtigiatores, negantque inveniri poſſe quid ægrotus deſideret: tunc eum depoſitum conclamant, auctoreſque ſunt conſanguineis ut hominem tollant è medio. Ita longiore morbo vexatos necant, aut fenio feſſos; eamque caritatem ſummam interpretantur, quia mors ærumnis languentium finem ponit. Eandem benevolentiam adhibent erga pueros parentibus orbatos, quos nullos eſſe malunt, quam miſeros. Alterum fontem morborum eſſe cenſent veneficorum occultas artes, & præſtigias, quas ridiculis cærimoniis conantur averruncare. Sæpe noxios humores ejiciunt

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

ſudando. Certum cafæ locum corticibus includunt, ac tegunt pellibus, ne qua poſſit aer aſpirare. Intro congerunt lapides deuſtos & igne multo ſaturos. Subeunt nudi & brachia cantitantes jactant. Sed, quod mireris, ab his thermis egreſſi & ſudore diffluentes, hyeme perfrigida, in lacum aut amnem ſe conjiciunt, de pleuritide ſecuri.

Mortuorum cadavera nunquam efferunt per cafæ januam, ſed per eam partem, in quam converſus eger exſpiravit. Animam putant evolare per camini ſpiraculum; ac ne moras trahat, cafæ priſtinæ deſiderio, neu puerulorum aliquem diſcedens affiet, hoc afflatu videlicet moriturum, ut putant; crebro fuſte tundunt parietes tugurii, ut eam citius exire compellant. Immortalem eſſe arbitrantur. Ne porro emoriatur fame, magnam vim ciborum infodiunt cum corpore; veſtes, item, ollas, variamque ſupellectilem, magno ſumptu, & multorum annorum labore conquiſitam, ut iis utatur, inquiunt, ac decentius verſetur in regno mortuorum. Sepulcra nobilium exſtant paulum ab humo: iis perticas in morem pyramidis compactas imponunt: arcum addunt, ſagittas, clypeum, & alia militiæ decora: feminarum vero tumulis, torques & monilia. Infantium corpora ſepeliunt propter viam, ut eorum anima, quam ab ipſorum corporibus abire longius non putant, illabatur in prætereuntis alicujus feminæ ſinum, & adhuc informem animare fetum poſſit. In luctu vultum inficiunt fuligine. Moniti de funere affines, vicini, & amici concurrunt in funeſtum tu-

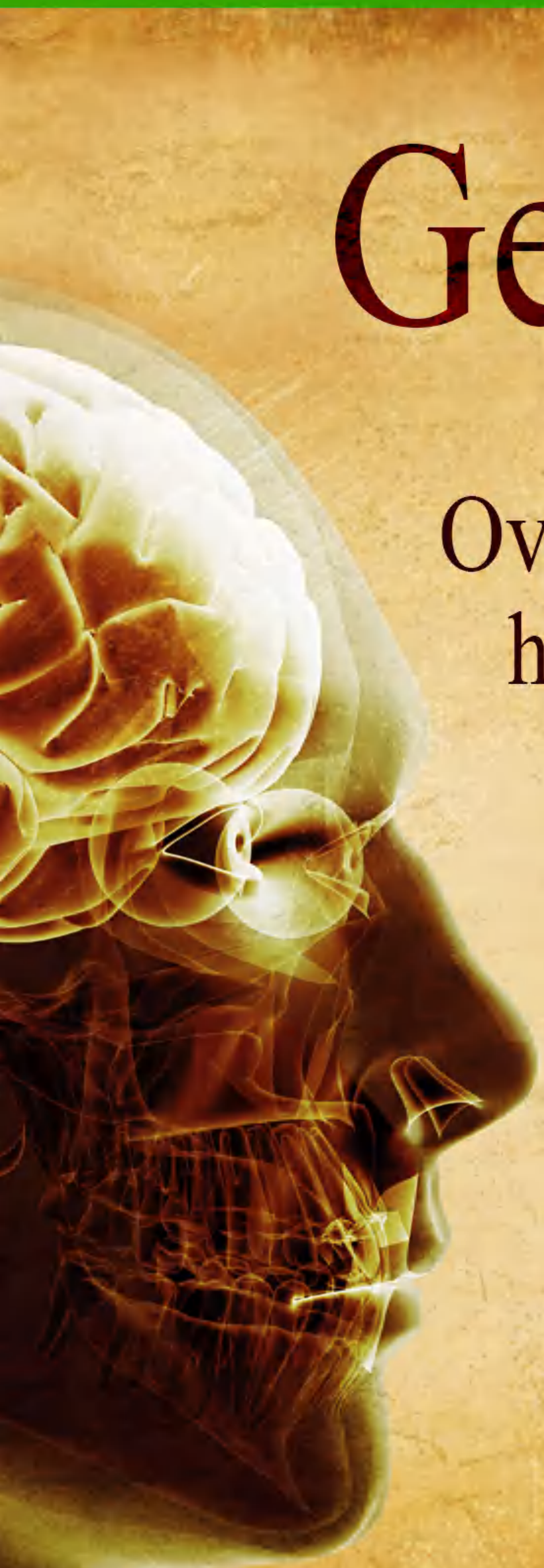
puts an end to the sufferings of the sick. They display the same benevolence towards children deprived of their parents, whom they prefer to see dead rather than to see them miserable. They believe that another source of disease is the hidden arts and the charms of sorcerers, which they seek to avert by means of absurd ceremonies. Often they expel noxious humors by sweating. They inclose a certain portion of the hut with pieces of bark and cover it with hides, in order that no air may enter. Within they pile stones heated to a high temperature. They enter naked and toss their arms while singing. But, strange to say, they will leave this heat, dripping with perspiration, and in the very coldest part of winter cast themselves into a lake or river, careless of pleurisy.

They never bear out the corpses of the dead through the door of the lodge, but through that part toward which the sick person turned when he expired. They think that the soul flies out through the smoke-hole; and, in order that it may not linger through longing for its old home, nor while departing breathe upon any of the children, who by such an act would be, as they think, doomed to death, they beat the walls of the wigwam with frequent blows of a club, in order that they may compel the soul to depart more quickly. They believe it to be immortal. That it may not thereafter perish with hunger, they bury with the body a large quantity of provisions; also, garments, pots, and various utensils of great expense, and acquired by many years' labor, in order, they say, that he may use them and pass his time more suitably in the kingdom of the dead. The tombs of the chiefs are raised a little from the ground; upon them they place poles joined in the

gurium. Unus aliquis, ſi mortui conditio ferat, verba facit, neque rationem ullam ex iis prætermittit, quæ ad leniendam ægritudinem à dicendi magiſtris afferri ſolent. Excurrit in demortui laudes: hominem eum natum fuiſſe admonet, atque adeo morti obnoxium: qui caſus emendari nequeant, fieri patientia leviores; alia id genus in eandem ſententiam edifſerit. Tertio die funus ducitur. Epulum funebre apponitur toti pago, ſingulis ſuam ſymbolam, nec malignè, conferentibus. Hujus epuli cauſas afferunt maximè tres: primam, ut communem mærorem leniant: alteram, ut qui amici peregrè ad funus veniunt, accipiantur honeſtius: tertiam, ut gratificentur extincti Manibus, quem ea liberalitate delectari exiſtimant, & appoſitis etiam dapibus paſci. Peracto convivio præfectus funeris, quem in ſingulis familiis clarioribus, certum atque inſignem habent, adeſſe tempus exequiarum proclamat. Omnes continuo lamentari, & ululare. Effertur cadaver propinquorum humeris, intectum fibrinis pellibus, & in feretro, è corticibus junciſve confecto compoſitum, collectis in glomum artubus, ut eo modo terræ mandetur, inquiunt, quo in alvo materna clim jacuit. Deponitur feretrum in conſtituto loco, munera quæ quiſque offert mortuo, præfiguntur perticis: & appellantur illorum auctores à funeris præfecto: inſtauratur planctus; denique juvenes ludicro certamine inter ſe dimicant.

Majori ſepeliuntur apparatu & luctu, qui aquis

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

obruti perierunt. Nam eorum cadavera laniantur: carnium pars cum viſceribus in ignem projicitur. Id ſacrificii quoddam genus eſt, quo placare cœlum contendunt. Iratum enim eſſe genti non dubitant, cum in undis quiſpiam extinguitur: ac ſi quid rite atque ordine peractum in iſtis funeribus non fuerit, huic piaculo calamitates omnes, quibus poſtea conflictantur, acceptas ferunt. Indulgent luctui per annum integrum. Primis diebus decem jacent humi, diu noctuque in ventrem proni: nefas tunc vocem ullam, niſi quæ dolorem ſignificet, mittere; aut accedere ad ignem, aut conviviis intereſſe. Anno reliquo luctus continuatur, at levius. Omittuntur omnia urbanitatis officia, colloquia cum vicinis, congreſſus amicorum; ac ſi conjugem amiſerint; cœlibes, donec annus fluxerit, perſtant. Poſt octavum aut decimum quemque annum Hurones, quæ natio latè patet, omnia cadavera certum in locum ex omnibus pagis deportant, & in foveam prægrandem conjiciunt. Eum diem Mortuorum vocant. Is ubi de procerum ſententia conſtitutus eſt, eruunt corpora ſepulcris; alia jam conſumpta, & oſſibus vix hærentia; alia putri carne leviter amicta: alia ſcatentia fœdis vermibus, & graviter olentia. Oſſa diſſoluta in ſaccos abdunt: cadavera nondum diſſuta componunt in ſarcophagis, & ſupplicantium ritu deferunt in deſtinatum locum, alto ſilentio, & compoſito gradu procedentes, non ſine ſuſpiriis, & lamentabili eiulatu. Ne vero memoria nobilium, & arte præſertim bellica inſignium,

limbs bent and pressed tightly against his body in order that, as they say, he may be committed to the earth in the same position in which he once lay in his mother's womb, is borne out on the shoulders of the relatives. The bier is set down at the appointed place, the gifts which each one offers to the dead are fastened to poles, and the donors are named by the master of the funeral. The mourning is renewed; finally, boys vie with each other in a mock contest.

Those who have been drowned are buried with greater ceremony and lamentation. For their bodies are cut open, and a portion of the flesh, together with the viscera, thrown into the fire. This is a sort of sacrifice, by means of which they seek to appease heaven. For they are sure that heaven is enraged against the race whenever any one loses his life by drowning. If any part of these funeral rites has not been duly and regularly performed, they believe that all the calamities from which they afterwards may suffer are a punishment for this neglect. They indulge their grief throughout an entire year. For the first ten days they lie upon the ground day and night, flat upon their bellies; it is impious then to utter any sound unless significant of grief, or to approach the fire, or to take part in feasts. During the remainder of the year the mourning continues, but less vigorously. All the duties of politeness, conversation with neighbors, and association with friends, are neglected; and, if a man has lost a wife he remains unmarried until the year has expired. Every eight or ten years the Hurons, which nation is widely extended, convey all their corpses from all the villages to a designated place and cast them into an immense pit. They call it the day of the Dead. When this has been decreed by resolution of the

qui prole carent, intercidat, eligunt aliquem ætate ac robore florentem, cui demortui nomen imponunt. Ille militum ſtatim delectum habet, ac bellum capeſsit, ut præclaro quopiam edito facinore, probet ſe non tantum nominis, ſed etiam virtutis ejus, cui ſubſtituitur, heredem eſſe. Inferioris notæ nomina æterno ſilentio damnant. Itaque ſimul ac in pago quiſpiam è vita ceſſit, ejus nomen alta voce pronunciatur per omnes cafas, ne quis illud temere uſurpet. Quod ſi mortuum tamen appellare neceſſe fuerit, utuntur verborum circuitione, & præfantur quidpiam, quo mortis ominoſa [346] memoria leniatur. Idque ſi omittatur, accipiunt in gravem contumeliam: neque atrociori maledicto vulnerari filium aut parentem poſſe putant, quam ſi huic filius, illi parens, mortuus exprobretur.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

BELLI GERENDI RATIO; ARMA; CRUDELITAS IN CAPTIVOS.

BELLA temere ac ferociter ſuſcipiunt, nulla fæpe, aut perlevi de cauſa. Duces communi ſuffragio legunt, eoſque vel familiarum præcipuarum natu maximos, vel quorum virtus bellica, aut etiam eloquentia perſpecta ſit. Civili bello nunquam inter ſe concurrunt; arma in finitimos tantum movent; neque imperii ac ditionis proferendæ cauſa, ſed ferè ut illatam ſibi, vel fœderatis, injuriam ulciſcantur. Gladios, & gravidas nitrato pulvere fiſtulas, à Batavis & Anglis accepere, quibus armis freti, certiùs & audacius in hoſtium, atque adeò Europæorum perniciem conſpirant. Interdum bella ſingulari certamine finiunt. Agmina duo, hinc Montanorum, quos vocant, inde Iroquæorum conſtiterant ante aliquot annos, velut in procinctu. Duces antegreſſi jam deſignabant locum ad aciem explicandam, cum unus alterum ſic allocutus fertur: Parcamus noſtrorum ſanguini, imo noſtro: manibus nudis rem agamus. Uter alterum dejecerit, is vincat. Placuit conditio. Manus ambo conſerunt. Montanus Iroquæum ita delaſſavit, dolum artemque virtuti miſcens, ut humi denique proſtratum ligaverit, impoſitumque humeris ad ſuum agmen victor detulerit. Clypeos conficiunt è ligno dolato, plerumque cedrino; paulum ad oras incurvos:

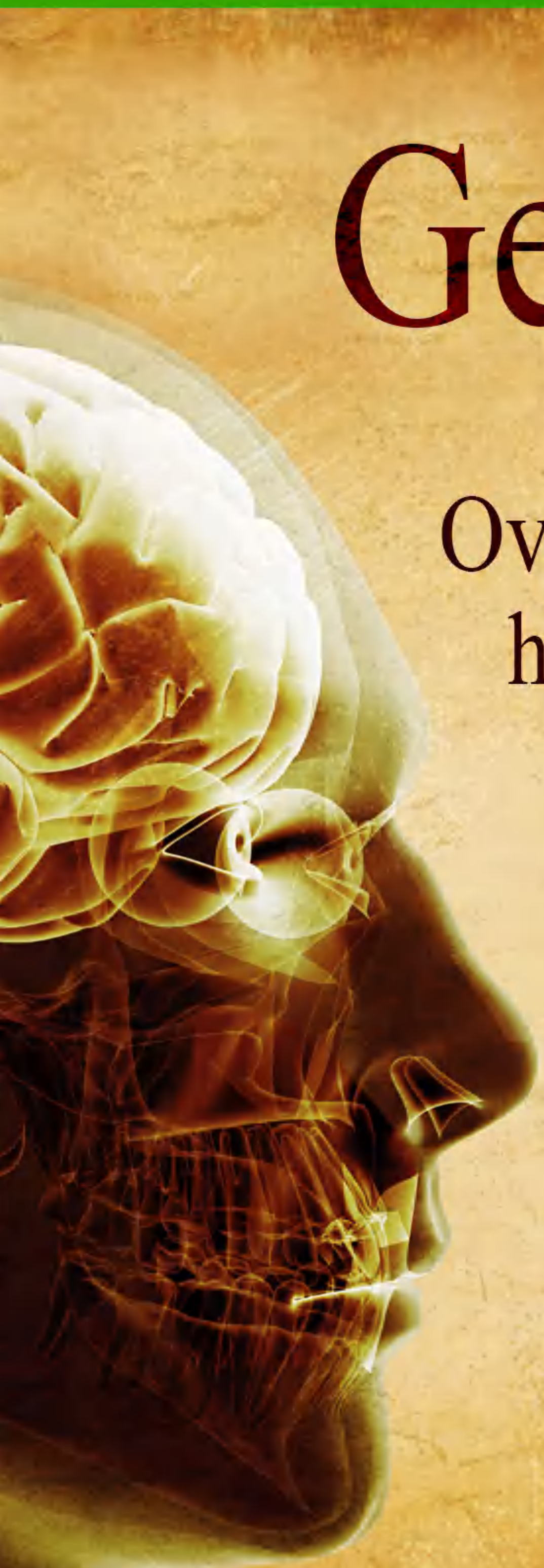
METHODS OF WARFARE; WEAPONS; CRUELTY TO PRISONERS.

THEY engage in war rashly and savagely, often with no cause, or upon a very slight pretext. They choose as leaders, by general vote, either the eldest members of illustrious families or those whose warlike valor, or even eloquence, has been approved. In civil war they never engage; they carry arms only against their neighbors, and not for the sake of extending their dominion and sway, but usually, in order that they may avenge an injury inflicted upon themselves or their allies. They have obtained swords and guns from the Dutch and English, and, relying upon these weapons, they plan with greater determination and boldness the destruction of their enemies, and even of the Europeans. Sometimes they decide their wars by single combat. Two bands, one of the so-called Montagnais,[70] the other of Iroquois, had met a few years ago in readiness for battle. The leaders had advanced and were already designating the positions for the formation of the lines of attack, when it is said that one thus addressed the other: "Let us spare the blood of our followers; nay, rather let us spare our own. Let us settle the matter with our bare hands, and he who overcomes the other shall be the victor." The proposition was accepted, and the two joined battle. The Montagnais, by means of a combination of strategy and skill with courage, so wearied the Iroquois that he finally hurled the latter to the ground, bound him, and triumphantly carried him off upon his

leves, prælongos & peramplos, ita ut totum corpus protegant. Jam, ne jaculis aut ſecuribus perrumpantur omnino ac diſſiliant, eos intus conſuunt reſtibus ex animalium corio contextis, quæ totam clypei molem continent connectuntque. Non geſtant è brachio ſuſpenſos, ſed funem ex quo pendent, rejiciunt in humerum dextrum: adeo ut latus corporis ſiniſtrum clypeo protegatur; mox ubi jaculum emiſerunt, aut ferream diſploſerunt fiſtulam, paulum retrahunt dextrum latus, ac ſiniſtrum clypeo tectum obvertunt hoſti.

In prælio id maximè ſtudent, vivos ut hoſtes capiant. Captis & in ſuos abductis pagos primum veſtes detrahunt; deinde ungues crudis dentibus ſingillatim avellunt: tum palo alligatos verberant ad ſatietatem. Mox vinculis ſolutos cogunt ire, ac redire, geminum inter ordinem armatorum ſpinis, fuſtibus, & ferramentis. Denique, accenſo circum foco, lentis ignibus miſeros torrent. Interim toroſas carnes fodicant candentibus laminis, & verubus, aut reciſas ac femiuſtulatas, fanie fluentes & ſanguine, vorant. Nunc tædis ardentibus totum corpus, ac præſertim hiatus vulnerum, pertentant: nunc detracta capitis cute inſpergunt nudæ calvæ favillam, & fervidos cineres: nunc brachiorum nervos ac pedum vellunt, lancinant, aut hebeti ſecant lente ferro, derepta parumper cute, in pedis malleolo, & manus carpo. Sæpe cogunt captivum infelicem ingredi per ſubjectos ignes: aut fruſta ſuæ carnis mandere, ac vivo ſepulcro condere. Hujuſmodi carnificinam non pauci è Patribus So-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

cietatis pertulere. Hanc porro extrahunt in multos dies; utque novis cruciatibus triſtis victima ſuppetat, intermittunt eoſdem aliquandiu, donec ad extremum fatiſcant corpora, & concidant. Tunc è pectore cor avellunt, torrent ſubjectis prunis; & cruore condîtum juvenibus avidè comedendum objiciunt, ſi captivus ſuppliciorum acerbitatem generosè fuerit perpeſſus: ut viri fortis, inquiunt, maſculum robur juventus bellatrix combibat. Laudatur qui rogum, cultros, vulnera, irretorto vultu aſpexerit, & exceperit: qui non ingemuerit, qui rifu cantuque tortoribus illuſerit: nam canere tot inter mortes, amplum ac magnificum eſſe putant. Itaque cantilenas ipſi multo ante componunt, quas capti, ſi fors ferat, recitent. Reliqua multitudo cadaver abſumit in ferali convivio. Dux reſervat ſibi verticis pellem cum coma, monumentum victoriæ, trophæum crudelitatis.

to walk through fire, or to eat, and thus entomb in a living sepulchre, pieces of his own flesh. Torture of this sort has been borne by not a few of the Fathers of the Society. Moreover, they prolong this torment throughout many days, and, in order that the poor victim may undergo fresh trials, intermit it for some time, until his vitality is entirely exhausted and he perishes. Then they tear the heart from the breast, roast it upon the coals, and, if the prisoner has bravely borne the bitterness of the torture, give it, seasoned with blood, to the boys, to be greedily eaten, in order, as they say, that the warlike youth may imbibe the heroic strength of the valiant man. The prisoner who has beheld and endured stake, knives and wounds with an unchanging countenance, who has not groaned, who with laughter and song has ridiculed his tormentors, is praised; for they think that to sing amid so many deaths is great and noble. So they themselves compose songs long beforehand, in order that they may repeat them if they should by chance be captured. The rest of the crowd consume the corpse in a brutal feast. The chief reserves for himself the scalp as a sign of victory, a trophy of cruelty.

INDOLES ANIMI: CORPORIS CULTUS: CIBI, CONVIVIA; SUPELLEX: RELIGIO, & SUPERSTITIONES.

SIC hoſtes accipiunt: at domi colunt pacem, rixaſque diligenter cavent, niſi quas ebrietatis impotentia excitavit. Fortunati, ſi nunquam illis hanc peſtem Europa importaſſet! Iraſci ne norunt quidem, ac vehementer initio mirabantur, cum inveherentur Patres in vitia pro concione, eoſque furere exiſtimabant, qui pacatos inter auditores, & amicos, tanta contentione ſe jactarent. Liberalitatis & munificentiæ famam aucupantur: ſua largiuntur ultro; ablata vix repetunt: nec fures aliter, quam rifu & fannis ulciſcuntur. Si quem, oborta ſimultate nefarie aliquid moliri ſuſpicantur, non minis deterrent hominem, ſed donis. Ex eodem concordiæ ſtudio fit ut aſſentiantur ultro, quidquid doceas; nihilo tamen ſecius tenent mordicus inſitam opinionem aut ſuperſtitionem: eoque difficilius erudiuntur. Quid enim agas cum annuentibus verbo & concedentibus omnia; re nihil præſtantibus? Miſerorum egeſtatem benignè ſublevant; viduarum ac ſenum ſuſtentant orbitatem, niſi cum fenio ætas vieta marcet, vel morbus gravior incidit: tunc enim abrumpere infelicem vitam ſatius arbitrantur, quàm alere ac producere. Quæcumque calamitas ingruat, nunquam ſe dimoveri de animi tranquillitate patiuntur, qua felicitatem potiſſimum

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

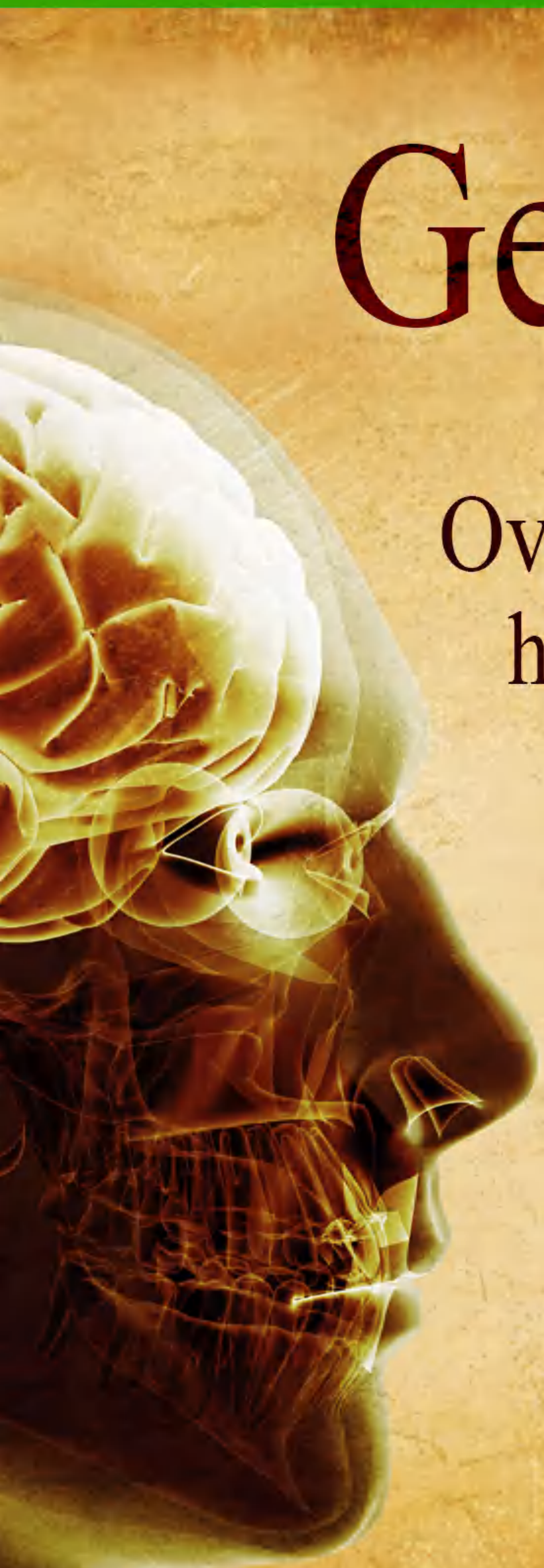
definiunt. Inediam multorum dierum, morbos, & ærumnas leniſſime & conſtantiſſimè perferunt. Ipſos partus dolores, licet acerbiſſimos, ita diſſimulant feminæ vel ſuperant, ut ne ingemiſcant quidem: ac ſi cui lacryma vel gemitus excideret, æterna flagraret ignominia, neque virum, à quo duceretur, præterea in veniret, Nihil unquam amicus cum amico, uxor cum viro, cum uxore vir, queritur & expoſtulat. Liberos mira caritate complectuntur: ſed modum non tenent; in eos enim neque animadvertunt ipſi, neque ab aliis animadverti ſinunt. Hinc petulantia puerorum & ferocitas, quæ, poſtquàm ſe corroboravit ætate, in omne ſcelus erumpit. Quam autem erga liberos & familiares comitatem præ ſe ferunt, eandem cum ceteris civibus ſuis, ac popularibus, uſurpant. Si quis amariore joco quempiam momordit, (nam dicaces vulgo ſunt, & in jocos effuſi) belle diſſimulant, aut vicem reponunt, & abſentes remordent; nam præſentes cavillari, aut coram dictis inceſſere, religio eſt. Non aliud libentiùs convicium regerunt laceſſiti, quàm ſi hominem ingenio carere dicant. Scilicet ingenii laudem vindicant ſibi; nec temere. Nemo inter illos hebes, ac tardus; quod nativa illorum in deliberando prudentia, & in dicendo facundia, declarat. Auditi quidem fæpe ſunt tam appoſitè ad perſuadendum perorare, idque ex tempore, ut admirationem exercitatiſſimis in dicendi palæſtra moverent.

Reſpondet ingenio corpus, aptum membris, pro-

misfortune may befall them, they never allow themselves to lose their calm composure of mind, in which they think that happiness especially consists. They endure many days' fasting, also diseases and trials, with the greatest cheerfulness and patience. Even the pangs of childbirth, although most bitter, are so concealed or conquered by the women that they do not even groan; and if a tear or a groan should escape any one of them, she would be stigmatized by everlasting disgrace, nor could she find a man thereafter who would marry her. Friends never indulge in complaint or expostulation to friends, wives to their husbands, or husbands to their wives. They treat their children with wonderful affection, but they preserve no discipline, for they neither themselves correct them nor allow others to do so. Hence the impudence and savageness of the boys, which, after they have reached a vigorous age, breaks forth in all sorts of wickedness. Moreover, they exercise the same mildness which they exhibit toward their children and relatives, toward the remainder of their tribe and their countrymen. If any person has injured another by means of a rude jest (for they are commonly very talkative, and are ready jesters), the latter carefully conceals it, or lays it up, and in retaliation injures his detractor behind his back; for to jest in the victim's presence, or to make a verbal attack, face to face, is characteristic of religion. There is nothing which they are more prone to use as a counter-allegation, when provoked, than to charge a man with a lack of intelligence. For they claim praise because of their intelligence, and not without good reason. No one among them is stupid or sluggish, a fact which is evident in their inborn foresight in deliberation and their fluency in speak-

ceritate formoſum, robore validum. Idem, qui Gallis, color; tametſi corrumpunt illum unguine, & oleo putri, quo ſe perungunt; necnon pigmentis variis, quibus ſibi pulcri, nobis ridiculi, videntur. Alios cernas nafo cæruleo, genis vero & ſuperciliis atratis: alii frontem, naſum, & genas, lineis verſicoloribus diſcriminant: totidem larvas intueri te putes. Ejuſmodi coloribus credunt ſe hoſtibus eſſe terribiles; ſuum pariter in acie metum, quaſi velo, tegi: demum pellem ipſam corporis indurari, ad vim hiberni frigoris facilius tolerandam. Præter iſtos colores induci pro cujuſque libidine ac deleri ſolitos, non pauci ſtabiles ac perpetuas avium aut animalium, putà ſerpentis, aquilæ, bufonis, imagines imprimunt cuti, hunc in modum. Subulis, cuſpidibus, aut ſpinis collum, pectus, genaſve ita pungunt, ut rudia rerum iſtarum lineamenta effingant: mox in punctam & cruentam cutem immittunt atrum è carbone comminuto pulverem, qui cum ſanguine concretus impreſſas effigies ita inurit vivæ carni, ut eas nulla temporis diuturnitas expungat. Totæ quædam nationes, ea præſertim quæ a Tabaco nomen habet, itemque alia quæ Neutra dicitur, id conſtanti more ac lege uſurpat, nec ſine periculo interdum; maxime ſi eſt tempeſtas frigidior, aut debilior [347] corporis conſtitutio. Tunc enim dolore victi, licet eum ne gemitu quidem ſignificent, linquuntur animo, & exanimes aliquando concidunt. Laudant oculos exiles, labra repanda & prominen-

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

tia: pars radunt comam, pars alunt: his nudum ſinciput, illis occiput: aliis coma tota ſurrigitur in vertice, aliis parcè ad tempora utrimque propendet. Barbam, inſtar monſtri, execrantur; ac ſi quis in mento ſuccreſcat pilus, ſtatim vellunt. Viri æque ac feminæ imas auriculas pertundunt: & iis inaures è vitro, teſtiſve piſcium, inſerunt. Quo foramen amplius eſt, eo cenſent formoſius. Nunquam ungues reſecant. Europæos rident, qui defluentem è naribus humorem candidis ſudariis excipiant, &, Quo, inquiunt, rem adeo ſordidam reſervant iſti? Saltantes curvant arcuatim corpus prono capite, & brachia ſic agitant, ut qui farinam manibus ſubigunt, raucùm identidem grunnientes. Alvum infimam ſuccingunt lato cortice, vel animantis pelle, aut verſicolore panno, cetera nudi. Feminæ pelles ex humeris & collo promittunt ad genua. Zonas atque armillas, è concha veneria, quam vulgo porcellanam appellamus, aut feta hyſtricis non inſcite contextas, geſtant: torques hunc in modum confectos magno habent in pretio. Storeas è mariſco (junci marini genus eſt) fatis eleganter elaborant: iis pavimentum ſternunt, in iiſdem carpunt ſomnos, aut in vitulorum marinorum, fibrorumve mollibus exuviis. Dormiunt circa focum in mapali medio ſemper ardentem, ſi frigus eſt: ſub dio, ſi æſtas.

Menſam, aut cathedram, in caſa tota videas nullam; in clunes ſubſidunt, ſimiarum inſtar: is veſcentium,

usage; sometimes it is not without danger, especially if the season be somewhat cold or the physical constitution rather weak. [347] For then, overcome by suffering, although they do not betray it by even a groan, they swoon away and sometimes drop dead. They praise small eyes and turned-up and projecting lips. Some shave their hair, others cultivate it; some have half the head bare, others the back of the head; the hair of some is raised upon their heads, that of others hangs down scantily upon each temple. They detest a beard as a monstrosity, and straightway pull out whatever hair grows upon their chins. The men as well as the women pierce the lobes of their ears, and place in them earrings made of glass or shells. The larger the hole, the more beautiful they consider it. They never cut their nails. They ridicule the Europeans, because the latter wipe off the mucus flowing from the nose with white handkerchiefs, and say: "For what purpose do they preserve such a vile thing?" In dancing, they bend the body, with the head lowered, in the form of a bow, and move their arms like those who knead dough, at the same time emitting hoarse grunts. They gird the lower portion of the belly with a broad piece of bark or hide or a parti-colored cloth, and leave the rest of the body naked. The women wear skins hanging from the shoulders and neck to the knees. They wear belts and bracelets ingeniously manufactured from Venus shells,[71] which we commonly call porcelain, or from porcupine quills; and necklaces made in this fashion they value highly. They make very neat mats from marisco (a variety of marine rush); with these they cover their floors, and also take their rest upon them, or upon the soft furs of the seal or the beaver. In winter they sleep

is deliberantium, & confabulantium habitus eſt. Adeuntes amicos ſalutant inepto rifu; ſæpius ho, hho, hhho, conclamantes. Cum veſcuntur, potum dapibus non intermiſcent, neque identidem bibunt; ſed femel tantùm, ſumpto cibo. Qui amicos convivio accipit, cum iis neque accumbit, nec ciborum partem ullam attingit, ſed epulantibus dividit: aut, ſi quem adhibet ſtructorem, ſedet ſeorſum jejunus, & ſpectat. Inter edendum ſilent: falem averſantur, & condimenta: oſſa canibus projicere piaculum arbitrantur: igni cremant, vel terræ infodiunt. Si enim, inquiunt, urſi, fibri, & aliæ, quas venando captamus, feræ, oſſa ſua permitti canibus, & comminui, reſcirent; non tam facile capi ſe paterentur. Adipem è pinguibus collectum cibis, abſtergunt coma; genis interdum brachiiſve allinunt, elegantiæ, ut aiunt, cauſa, & valetudinis: nam adipe non ſolum nitere cutem, ſed corroborari membra exiſtimant. Non alio cibo veſcuntur libentius quàm Sagamita. Pulmentum eſt è farina, præſertim Indici tritici, confectum: admiſto, quod illis condimentum præcipuè ſapit, oleo. Itaque in conviviis pars dapum prima oleum, aut adeps, in quem concretum & ſpiſſum ita dentes infigunt, ut nos in panem aut pomum. Antequam illis lebetes, cortinæ, aliaque id genus vafa ærea deferrentur è Gallia, utebantur cacabis è cortice compactis; verùm quia imponi flammis non poterant impunè, hanc ad coquendas carnes artem excogitaverant. Silices plurimos

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

conjiciebant in focum, donec penitus ignem combibiſſent. Candentes in ollam frigida plenam & carnibus alios atque alios ſubinde immittebant. Ad hunc modum aqua calefacta carnes citius opinione faciliuſque percoquit. Ad tergendas manus utuntur piloſo canum tergo, cui illas affricant; item ſcobe ligni putris. Hæc matribus vice panniculorum eſt, ad purgandas infantium fordes; hæc inſtar culcitæ languidis corporibus ſubſternitur. Vaſa coquinaria non extergunt. Quo ſunt craſſo pingui magis oblita, eo melius, illorum judicio, nitent. Turpe ducunt & ſuperbum inambulare inter colloquendum. Odorem moſci graviter ferunt, & meram eſſe mephitim putant, præ carnis rancidæ, aut adipis mucidi fruſto.

Sexcenta ſunt ejus generis, in quibus longiſſimè recedunt ab Europæorum inſtitutis: ſed ab illorum vitiis propius abſunt, eaque vel æquant, vel ſuperant. Gulæ irritamenta, & inimicas bonæ ac fanæ menti potiones, ab Europæis mercatoribus acceperunt, quibus lucri bonus eſt odor, etiam ex flagitio, & ſcelerata nundinatione. Tandiu eſſe pergunt, dum adeſt quod edant: nihil in craſtinum, aut hyemem, reponunt: nec famem valde reformidant, quia ſe ferre diuturnam poſſe confidunt. Conviviis ea lex poſita conſenſu moribuſque gentis eſt, ut omnia fercula conſumantur. Si quis edit parciùs, & excuſat valetudinem, plectitur, aut ejicitur, ut inſulſus, quaſi qui vivendi artem neſciat. Primaria ſupellectilis domeſticæ

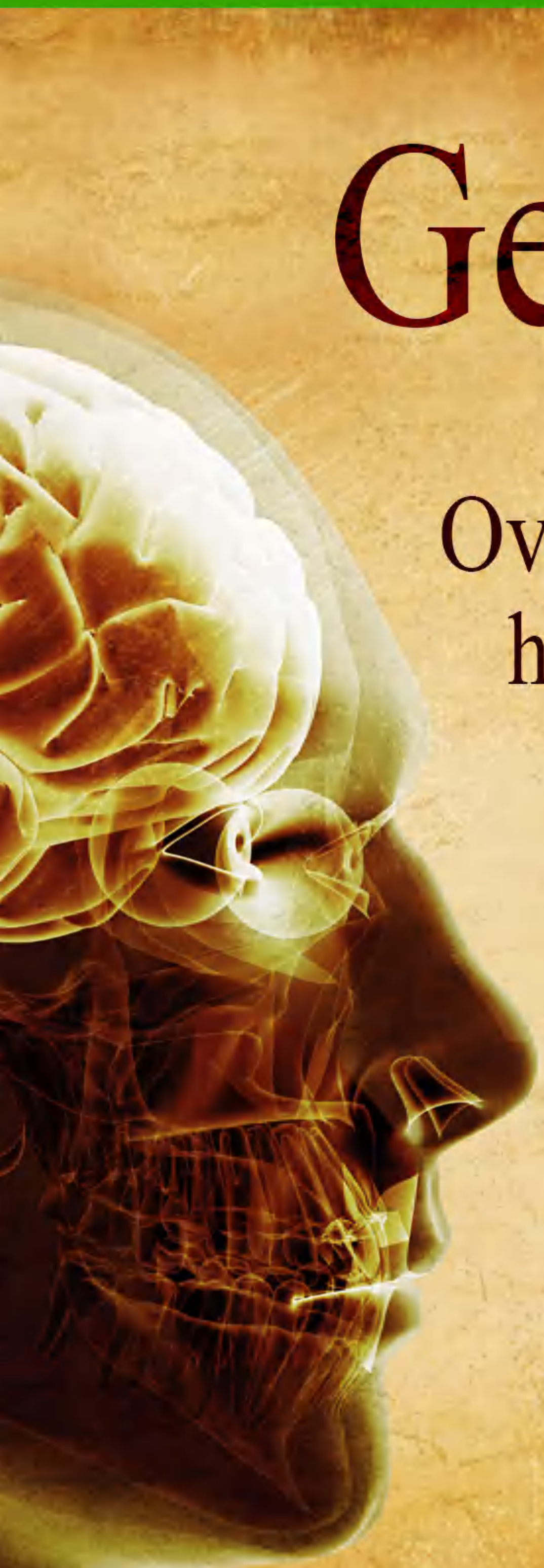
of closely joined bark; but, because they could not place them with safety over the flames, they devised the following way of cooking meat: They cast a large number of flint stones into the fire until they had become red-hot. Then they would drop these hot stones one after another into a vessel full of cold water and meat. In this manner the water was heated and the meat cooked more quickly and more easily than one would suppose. For wiping their hands they use the shaggy back of a dog, also powder of rotten wood. The last-named is used by mothers, in the place of wash-cloths, to clean the dirt from their infants; it is also used as a mattress to support the weary body. They do not cleanse their cooking utensils. The more they are covered with thick grease, so much the better are they, in their judgment. They consider it disgraceful and arrogant to walk while conversing. They dislike the odor of musk, and consider it a downright pest in comparison with a piece of rancid meat or moldy fat.

There are six hundred matters of this sort in which their customs differ very widely from those of Europeans; but they are less removed from the faults of the latter, and either equal or excel them. They have received stimulants of the appetite, and drinks hostile to a good and sound mind, from European traders, who think much of profit, even when tainted with the disgrace of a wicked traffic. They continue to exist so long as they have anything to eat; they store up nothing for to-morrow, or for the winter; nor do they greatly dread famine, because they are confident of their ability to bear it for a long time. In feasts it is the rule, by general consent and custom of the race, that all the food shall be consumed.

pars, olla eſt, ſive ahenum, in quo carnes coquuntur. Opes lebetum numero metiuntur: nec regem Galliæ aliam ob cauſam initio magni æſtimabant; quàm quòd plures habere ollas dicebatur. Quanta fit apud exleges, & omni freno ſolutos, intemperantiæ impunitas & licentia, præſertim in adoleſcentibus, promptum eſt intelligere: nam grandiores natu libidinem certis finibus circumſcribunt, cùm æſtus cupiditatum deferbuit: nec impune eſt peccanti feminæ.

Religionis apud illos neque lex ulla, neque cura. Nullo ſtato & certo cultu Numen proſequuntur. Eſſe tamen aliquod, velut in ſubluſtri nocte, vident. Quod quiſque puer aſpicit in ſomnis, cum luceſcere ratio incipit, hoc illi deinceps numen eſt, canis, urſus, avis. Vivendi normam & agendi plerumque ducunt è ſomniis; ut ſi quem interficiendum, exempli cauſa, ſomniaverint, non conquiefcant donec hominem inſidiis exceptum necaverint. Piget fabulas referre, quas de mundi opificio comminiſcuntur. His implent otioſas & avidas plebis aures harioli, & circulatores nequiſſimi, impietate quæſtuoſa. Malorum auctorem genium neſcio quem vocant Manitoù, ac vehementiſſime perhorreſcunt. Hoſtem procul dubio generis humani, qui à nonnullis divinos honores & ſacrificia quædam extorquet. Circa naturam animarum non levius delirant. Simulacra fingunt corporea, cibi & potionis egentia. Deſtinatum animabus verſus occidentem ſolem, pagum credunt, in quem obita morte

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

ſe recipiant: & ubi epulis, venationi, & choreis indulgeant. Hæc enim apud illos ſumma.

Cum primum de ſempiternis ignibus, & incendiis ſceleri deſtinatis audierunt, immane quantum obſtupuere: fidem tamen pertinaciter abrogabant, quòd dicerent ibi eſſe ignem non poſſe, ubi nihil ligni ſit: tum, quænam ſilvæ alere tot ignes, tam diuturnos, poſſent? Hæc ratio ineptiſſimat antam vim apud barbaras mentes habebat, ut iis perſuaderi veritas evangelica non poſſet. Quippe in homine carnali, ut ait è SS. PP. nonnemo, tota ratio intelligendi eſt conſuetudo cernendi. Expugnavit nihilominus pertinaciam ſacerdos acer & ingenioſus. Fidenter affirmavit inferorum terram vices obire ligni, & ipſam ardere per ſefe. Rifu barbaræ multitudinis exceptus eſt. Imo, inquit, hujus Avernalis terræ fruſtum proferam vobis, ut, quoniam verbis divinis non creditis, veſtris ipſi oculis credatis. Accendit curioſitatem promiſſi novitas & fiducia. Convenerunt è tota regione ad diem conſtitutum, & in ingenti planitie, collibus inſtar amphitheatri cincta, conſederunt. Primores gentis duodecim lecti fuere, viri graves & cordati, qui facerdotem obſervarent, numquid fraudis ac præſtigiarum lateret. Ille ſulphuris glebam depromit, dat iſtis arbitris & cognitoribus tractandam: hanc oculis, naſo, manu ſcrutati, haud dubie terram eſſe confeſſi ſunt. Aderat olla cum prunis candentibus. Tunc ſacerdos populo procul ſpectante; inhiantibus, demiſſo in pru-

spirits, they go none the less astray. They make them corporeal images which require food and drink. They believe that the appointed place for souls, to which after death they are to retire, is in the direction of the setting sun, and there they are to enjoy feasting, hunting, and dancing; for these pleasures are held in the highest repute among them.

When they first heard of the eternal fire and the burning decreed as a punishment for sin, they were marvelously impressed; still, they obstinately withheld their belief because, as they said, there could be no fire where there was no wood; then, what forests could sustain so many fires through such a long space of time? This absurd reasoning had so much influence over the minds of the savages, that they could not be persuaded of the truth of the gospel. For, plainly, in the physical man, as some one from Sts. Peter and Paul says, the entire system of knowledge is based on vision. Nevertheless, a clever and ingenious priest overcame their obstinacy. He confidently declared that the lower world possessed no wood, and that it burned by itself. He was greeted by the laughter of the crowd of savages. "But," said he, "I will exhibit to you a piece of this land of Avernus, in order that, since you do not believe the words of God, you may trust the evidence of your own eyes." The novelty and boldness of the promise aroused their curiosity. Upon the appointed day they assembled from the whole neighborhood, and sat down together in an immense plain, surrounded by hills like an amphitheater. Twelve leading men of the tribe, persons of dignity and sagacity, were chosen to watch the priest, in order that neither fraud nor sorcery might be concealed. He produced a lump of sulphur and gave it to the judges

nas nafo, judicibus, excuſſit in carbones è ſulphurea gleba particulas aliquot, quæ ſubito conceperunt ignem & odore fetido nares curioſas impleverunt. Hoc iterum, ac tertiò cum eſſet factum, aſſurrexit multitudo attonita, manum planam imponens ori, quo geſtu ſummam admirationem teſtantur; & inferos eſſe dicenti Deo credidit.

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

[51] Rerum Insigniorum Indiculus.

ALCES *conſideratio* 7
virtus mira ungulæ ejus . . . 8
Angli barbaris gladios et gravidas nitrato pulvere fiſtulas ſuppeditant . . 27
Animarum de natura delirant Canadenſes . 20, 46
Aves Novæ Franciæ 14
Avis prædatrix 15
Batavi barbaris arma vendunt . . . 27
Canada fluvius 5
Canadenſium domus . . 16
mulierum labores . . . 17
morbi et ægrorum cura . . . 18
funera 20
bella 27
arma 28
crudelitas in captivos . . . 29
indoles 33
corporis cultus 37
cibi 42
convivia 44
[52] *Canadenſium ſupellex* 44
religio et ſuperſtitiones . . . 45
Captivorum crudelis ſors 29
Caſæ Canadenſium 16
cadavera perjanuam nunquam efferuntur . 20
Caſæ fibrorum 10
Cauſarus ſeu Piſcis armatus . . . 12
Clypei barbarorum 28

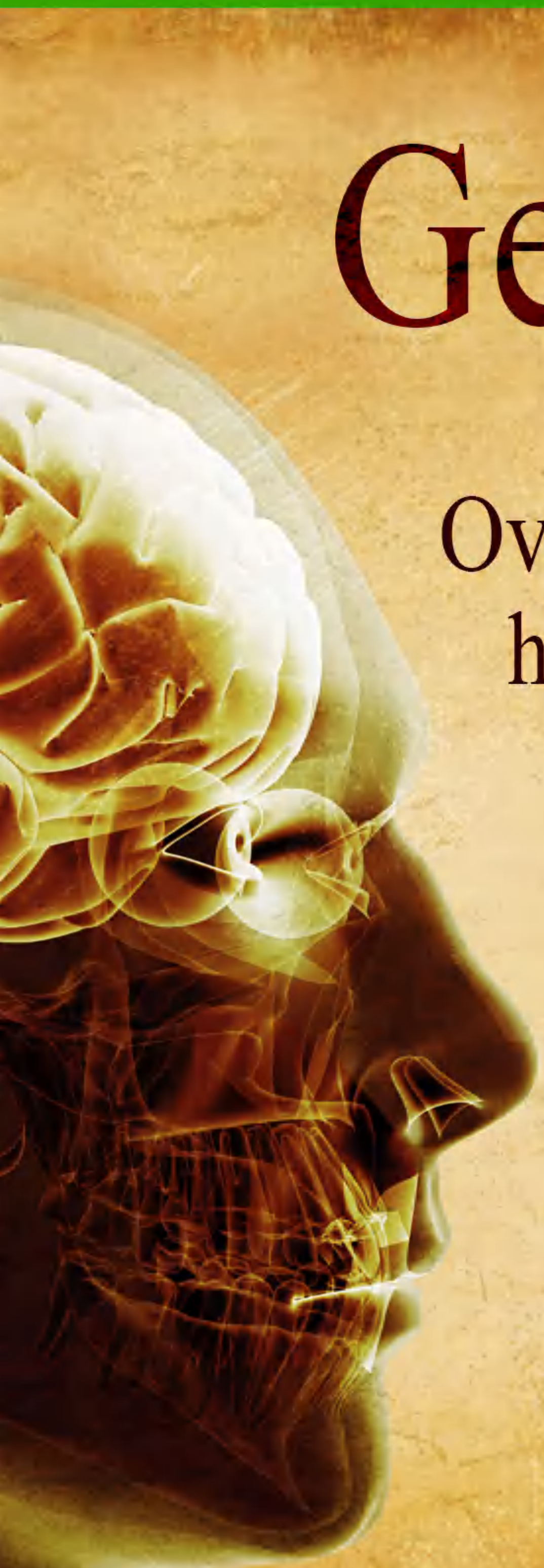
[51] Index of Prominent Topics.

[*The page numbers refer to O'Callaghan's Reprint.*]

ELK: *description* . . . 7
wonderful efficacy of its hoof . . 8
The English supply swords, guns and ammunition to the savages 27
Absurd ideas of Canadians concerning the soul 20, 46
Birds of New France 14
A bird of prey 15
The Dutch sell arms to the savages . . 27
The river Canada 5
Homes of the Canadians 16
tasks of the women 17
diseases and treatment of the sick . . 18
funerals . . . 20
wars . 27
weapons 28
cruelty to prisoners . . . 29
character . . . 33
care of the body . . 37
food 42
feasts 44
[52] *Implements of the Canadians* . 44
religion and superstitions . 45
Cruel fate of prisoners . . . 29
Houses of the Canadians 16
corpses are never carried out through the door . 20
Houses of the beavers 10
The Causar or armored Fish . 12
Shields of the savages . 28

Coquendi ratio in cacabis è cortice confectis . 42
Ebrietas ab Europæis discitur . . . 44
Exequiarum ritus 20
Feminis imponitur quidquid laboris est . 17
Fibri consideratio . . . 9
Fluvii quid habent singulare . 6
Franciæ Novæ descriptio, flumina . . 5
cœlum 6
soli natura 7
feræ 7
Galliæ rex cur magni æstimabatur 45
Hurones diem Mortuorum celebrant 25
Infantium mira mortalitas . . . 17
cur corpora propter viam sepeliunt . . 21
Infernales ignes esse probat sacerdos . . 48
[53] *Iroquæi bellum cum Montanis singulari certamine finiunt* 28
Iroquæorum lacus 12
Kebeccum, urbs primaria Novæ Franciæ . . 6
Magna Bellua, quid 7
Manitoù, genius malorum 46
Missisipus fluvius 6
Montani bellum singulari certamine finiunt 28
Morborum fontes duo 18
Mortuorum festa celebritas apud Hurones . 25
Mos Canadensis mortuos suscitandi . 25
Naviculæ barbarorum 6
Neutra Natio . . . 38
Numen nullo certo cultu prosequuntur . 44
Palumbes absque numero . . . 14
Piscis armatus 13
Patres non pauci Societatis Jesu dire torquentur . 31
Religio Canadensium 45
Reticula pedibus substrata ut super nives de ambulent 8

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

S. Laurentii fluvius . . 5. 6
Sagamita quid, ... 42
[54] *Saltus seu cataduꝑæ in fluviis* . . . 6
Sinus Sancti Laurentii 14
Somniorum vanitas 46
Sudando noxios humores ejiciunt . . . 19
Tabacum, natio ejus nominis . . 38
Trophæus 32
Volucrum insula 14

St. Lawrence river . 5, 6
Sagamita, what it is 42
[54] *Water-falls, or cataracts, in the rivers* 6
Gulf of St. Lawrence . . . 14
Ignorant belief in dreams . . 46
They expel noxious humors by sweating . 19
Tobacco, the nation of that name . 38
The trophy . . 32
Isle of Birds . 14

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Title-page. This is given in photographic facsimile, in this reissue. The Lenox and Brown copies are alike, in this. It will be noticed that there is no date of publication, this being established from the Privilege.

Collation. Title, 1 p.; blank at back of title, 1 p.; dedication "A LA ROYNE," 3 pp., signed "MARC LESCARBOT;" privilege, 1 p., dated "Paris, 9 Sep., 1610," and signed "Brigard;" text, pp. 7–44. Page 7 is misnumbered 1. (The Brown Catalogue says: "Page 1 is misnumbered 7." This is a misprint in the Catalogue.) "FIN," at end of p. 24; then pp. 23 and 24 are reprinted, all except the last sentence on p. 24: "Dieu vueille par ſa | grace conduire le tout en forte que la chofe | reüſſiſſe à ſa gloire & à l'édification de ce peu- | ple, pour lequel tous Chrétiens doivent faire | continuelles prieres à ſa divine bonté, à ce qu'il | lui plaiſe confirmer & avancer l'œuvre qu'il | lui a pleu ſuſciter en ce temps pour l'exaltation | de ſon nom, & le ſalut de ſes creatures. | FIN."

It is evident that the intention was to have the first leaf (pp. 23, 24) cut out. This duplication of pp. 23, 24 is in both the Brown and Lenox copies.

The "Extrait du Regitre de Bapteme" in the Brown copy (it is not in the Lenox copy) forms 2 pages at the end of text. The first page of this "Regitre" is not numbered; the second is numbered "ϟ6" (intended for 46), and this ends the

Relations, as "Lenox Catalogue;" Harrisse's *Notes sur la Nouvelle France*, as "Harrisse's *Notes*," or simply as "Harrisse;" etc., etc. The student who is familiar, in a general way, with these bibliographical sources,—and it is presumed that those are, for whom this series of reprints is designed,—will not be confused by the customary method of brief citation.

book. The same "Regitre" appears in somewhat different order in Lescarbot's *Nouvelle France*, (1612 ed.), pp. 638–640, chap. 5, book v.; also, according to Harrisse's *Notes*, in chap. 3, book v., of the 1611 ed.

II

In Bertrand's *Lettre Missive*, we follow the original Paris edition, in Lenox. It is a rare publication, the Lenox copy being apparently the only one in the United States; Brown has a manuscript copy, made from that at Lenox. Sabin (vol. x., no. 40682), says: "It is a piece of unusual rarity." Sabin has a previous reference in vol. ii., no. 5025, under caption "Bertrand," wherein a misprint makes him cite the date of the letter as "28 June, 1618" (eight years later than the actual date); a further misprint causes Sabin to record the pamphlet as having "48 pages or less," the actual number being 8. In his *Notes*, Harrisse omits a line-ending after the second "nouuelle" in his description of the title-page. See, for further references: Ternaux, no. 329; Winsor, p. 299; Lenox Catalogue, p. 3; Brown Catalogue, vol. ii., no. 103.

Title-page. Given in photographic facsimile, in present volume.

Collation. Title, 1 p.; blank at back of title, 1 p.; text, pp. 3–6; dated on p. 6, "Port Royal xxviij. Iuin, 1610," and signed "Bertrand." Blank leaf at end, completing 4 leaves=8 pp.

III–VI

In these four letters, by Biard and Massé, we follow Carayon's *Première Mission des Jésuites au Canada* (Paris, 1864). It is a scarce book, and brought $8 at

the Barlow Sale, in New York, 1890. See references in Harrisse, p. 285; Sabin, no. 10792; Winsor, pp. 151, 292, 300; and Lenox Catalogue, p. 15. The origin of the letters in the volume is found at the top of the first page of each letter; and these data, with accompanying notes by Carayon, are reproduced in the present series, which will, in strict chronological order, contain all of the papers given by that editor; although in many cases we shall follow the original issues of the letters, whenever found. Documents III., V., and VI. were written in Latin; and Document IV. in French.

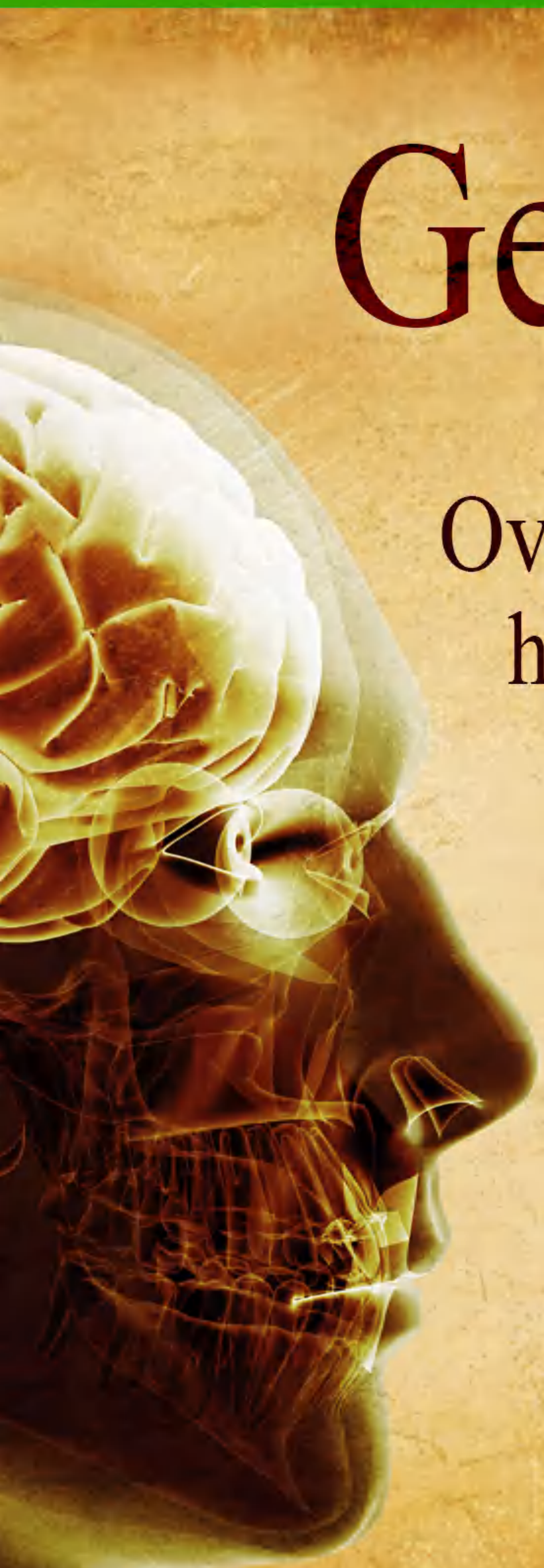
Collation. Blank, 2 pp.; bastard title, 1 p.; blank, 1 p.; title proper, 1 p.; blank, 1 p. Preface begins on p. vii. (not numbered), and ends on p. xvi. Preface acknowledges indebtedness to F. Felix Martin, S. J., for copying and translating into French (from the Latin) most of the letters in the volume. Text, pp. 1–302; Table at end, 2 pp.; the last of these is numbered 304.

VII

We follow the style and make-up of Dr. E. B. O'Callaghan's Reprint (Albany, N. Y., 1871) of the *Canadicæ Missionis*, in Jouvency's *Hist. Soc. Jesu*, part v., commencing p. 321. In the Lenox Catalogue, it is designated "O'Callaghan's Reprint, No. 4." This numbering of O'Callaghan's reprints, is merely a device peculiar to the Lenox Catalogue, for sake of easy reference, and has been followed by Winsor; the reprints themselves bear no numbers.

The text of this document, however, we have compared with the original folio edition of Jouvency's work, in the library of St. Francis Xavier College, New York, and the pagination thereof is indicated

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

NOTES TO VOL. I

(Figures in parentheses, following number of note, refer to pages of English text.)

1. (p. 55)—**Marie de Médicis, queen regent, widow of Henry of Navarre; appointed regent by the king, the day before his assassination, May 14, 1610. She was accused of having been privy to his murder.**

2. (p. 55)—**The reports of Champlain, and the maps and charts with which, upon returning from his voyage of 1603, he entertained Henry IV., so interested the latter that he vowed to encourage the colonization of New France. To carry on this work he commissioned, as his lieutenant-general in Acadia, Pierre du Gua, Sieur de Monts, governor of Pons, a Huguenot resident at court, and, according to Champlain, "a gentleman of great respectability, zeal, and honesty." De Monts' commission is given at length in Baird's *Huguenot Emigration to America*, vol. i., p. 341; his charter of "La Cadie" embraced the country between the 40th and 46th degrees of latitude, and he held therein a monopoly of the fur trade. J. G. Bourinot, in *Canadian Monthly*, vol. vii., pp. 291, 292, says the name Acadia (also written Acadie, and La Cadie) "comes from àkăde, which is an affix used by the Souriquois or Mic Macs . . . to signify a place where there is an abundance of some particular thing."—See, also, Laverdière's *Œuvres de Champlain* (Quebec, 1870), p. 115. In 1604, De Monts sailed from France with a colony composed of Catholics and Huguenots, served by "a priest and a minister." Champlain and Poutrincourt were with the expedition, and Pontgravé commanded one of the two ships. The cancelling of his monopoly (1607), deprived De Monts of the means to carry on his colonization schemes. The title to Port Royal he had already ceded to Poutrincourt. The king renewed De Monts' monopoly for one year, upon his undertaking to found a colony in the interior. Thereupon De Monts sent Champlain to the St. Lawrence (1608), as his lieutenant. Upon the death of Henry IV. (1610), De Monts, now financially ruined, surrendered his commission, selling his proprietary rights to the Jesuits.**

"Jean de Biencourt, Baron de Poutrincourt, a gentleman of Picardy, a brave chevalier, had carried arms against Henry IV. in the

ranks of the Catholics, during the wars of the League. Lescarbot tells how 'The king, holding him besieged in his castle of Beaumont, wished to give him the dukedom of this place in order to attach him to his service.' Poutrincourt refused. But, when the king had abjured his faith, he served this prince loyally and followed him to battle, where he accumulated more honor than fortune. In 1603, he lived in retirement with his wife, Jeanne de Salazar, and his children, in his barony of Saint-Just, in Champagne, struggling painfully against the difficulties of an embarrassed situation, and striving to improve the tillage and crops of his little domain. It was here that De Monts, his former companion in arms, found him. He knew his courage, his intelligence, and his activity, and did not doubt that a voyage to Canada and an agricultural colony in these distant lands, so fertile and primeval, would appeal to his ardent soul. Poutrincourt, in fact, received with enthusiasm the plan of his old friend; however, before binding himself definitely, he wished to find out, on his own account, something about the state of the country, and for this purpose to make a trial voyage."— Rochemonteix's *Les Jésuites et la Nouvelle France* (Paris, 1896), vol. i., p. 11.

Pleased with Annapolis harbor, Poutrincourt decided to settle there with his family, and De Monts gave him a grant of the place. In 1606, Poutrincourt made a second voyage to Port Royal, exploring the coast with Champlain and Lescarbot. After the abandonment of the colony (1607), he went to France, returning to Acadia in 1610, inspired with zeal to convert the savages, but without the aid of the Jesuits. See Parkman's *Pioneers of France in the New World* (ed. 1885, which will hereafter be cited, unless otherwise noted), pp. 244–322; also Shea's ed. of Charlevoix's *History of New France*, vol. i., p. 260. By the destruction of Port Royal in 1613, he was the heaviest loser — the total loss to the French, according to Charlevoix, being a hundred thousand crowns. In 1614, Poutrincourt visited the ruins of Port Royal for the last time, thence returning to France to engage in the service of the king. He was fatally wounded by a treacherous shot after the taking of Méry (1615). Baird (*Hug. Emig.*, vol. i., p. 94), says: "This nobleman, if nominally a Roman Catholic, appears to have been in full sympathy with his Huguenot associates, De Monts and Lescarbot. His hatred of the Jesuits was undisguised." Lescarbot's account of Poutrincourt's dispute with them differs essentially from that given by Biard, *post*.

3. (p. 55)— Marc Lescarbot (or L'Escarbot), parliamentary advocate, was born at Vervins, France, between 1570 and 1580. He was more given to literature than to law, and appears to have been a man of judgment, tact, and intelligence. He spent the winter of

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Galvano, in Goldsmid's ed. of *Hakluyt's Voyages*, vol. xvi., p. 293.)

Harrisse (*Bibliotheca Americana Vetustissima*, no. 71) cites the *Chronicon* of Eusebius (Paris, 1512) as having, "under the date 1509, a notice saying that there had been brought to Rouen seven Savages from North America."

The Indians of Newfoundland, when first discovered by the French, called codfish *bacalos*, which Lescarbot and other early French writers say is identical with the Basque word for codfish. Many evidences led Cartier, upon his first voyage (1534), to believe that the natives had had previous intercourse with Europeans.

8. (p. 61)—Probably André Thevet. A translation of his description of the Isles of Demons (now known as Belle Isle and Quirpon), is given in Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 191. Thevet's *Cosmographie Universelle* (Paris, 1558), and *Singularitez de la France antarctique* (Paris, 1558), must have been familiar to Lescarbot. De Costa gives a translation of so much of the *Cosmographie* as relates to New England, in *Magazine of American History*, vol. viii., p. 130: "The production of the mendacious monk, André Thevet." It seems clear that Thevet never saw the American coast, that his imagination amplified the accounts of navigators who had visited the region, particularly those of Cartier. Priceless as are first editions of Thevet, he has a poor reputation for veracity.

9. (p. 61)—The Armouchiquois (or Almouchiquois of Champlain) were, according to Parkman (*Jesuits of N. America*, p. xxi.), the Algonkin tribes of New England,—Mohicans, Pequots, Massachusetts, Narragansetts, and others,—"in a chronic state of war with the tribes of New Brunswick and Nova Scotia." Williamson, in *History of the State of Maine* (Hallowell, 1832), vol. i., p. 477), says they were an Etchemin tribe, the Marechites of the St. John River; but Champlain, who had, like Biard, visited the Armouchiquois country, says that it lies beyond Choüacoet (Saco), and that the language is different from those of the Souriquois and Etchemins. Laverdière affirms that "the French called Almouchiquois several peoples or tribes that the English included under the term Massachusetts;" and he conjectures that these two names are etymologically allied.—See his *Champlain*, pp. 200, 205, 206.

10. (p. 61)—Lescarbot here refers to his *Histoire de la Nouvelle France*. The first edition (Paris, 1609) is a rare prize to collectors,—a London catalogue of 1878 pricing it at £45. The edition of 1612 is followed in the Tross reprint (Paris, 1866); that of 1618 contains Lescarbot's assault upon the Jesuits. The fourth and sixth books, only, were "translated out of the French into English" by P. Erondelle, 1609. A German version of a brief summary of the work appeared in 1613.

11. (p. 67)—The term Norembega, variously spelled, was applied indifferently to the entire range of Acadian and New England coast; but apparently the Penobscot is here meant. See Winsor's *N. and C. Hist.*, vol. iv., index; *Documentary History of State of Maine*, vol. ii., pp. lii., liii.; Prince Society's ed. of *Champlain*, memoir and index. The claim is made for Bangor, Me., that it is on the site of an ancient town called Norumbe[redacted]. Much information on this point is given in *Maine Hist. Soc[redacted]*, vols. ii., iv., v., vii., viii., and ix. Sewall claims that the [redacted]rm of Norumbegua is Arâmbec, and that it was the name of a city of the savages, situated near the head-waters of the Damariscotta, above Pemaquid.—*Ancient Dominions of Maine*, pp. 30–46. Horsford, in *Discovery of the Ancient City of Norembega* and *Defences of Norembega* (Boston, 1890 and 1891), claims, on slender evidence, that Watertown, Mass., occupies the site of an old town of that name founded by Norse vikings in 1000 A. D.

12. (p. 67)—Bay of Fundy; first shown on map of Diego Homem (1558); named by De Monts Grande Baye Française (shown on Lescarbot's chart of Port Royal); appears as Argal's Bay, on Alexander's map (1624); Golfo di S. Luize, on Dudley's (1647); Fundi Bay, on Moll's (1712); and Bay of Fundy, or Argal, on that of the English and French Commissioners (1755). Bourinot (*Canad. Mo.*, vol. vii., p. 292) says that Fundy is a corruption of *Fond de la Baie*, as the lower part of the bay was called; he follows here Ferland's suggestion, in *Cours d'Histoire du Canada* (Quebec, 1861), vol. i., p. 65.

13. (p. 67)—The son of Pontgravé, who, according to Parkman (*Pioneers*, p. 290) had exasperated the Indians by an outrage on one of their women, and had fled to the woods.

14. (p. 69)—*Palourdes* is Breton for a kind of shellfish.

15. (p. 73)—The Souriquois, or Micmacs, of Nova Scotia, Champlain's map of 1632 places them east of Port Royal.

16. (p. 73)—Raphael Maffei, Maffeus Volaterranus, or Raffaello Volterrano, savant and historian; born in Volterra 1451, died 1521 or 1522. Harrisse (*Bib. Amer. Vet.*, p. 88) gives a catalogue of his works, and says, "The *Commentary* of Maffei has a peculiar interest from the fact that it preceded the publication of Peter Martyr's *Decades*" (1511–46).

Laverdière (*Champlain*, p. 70, *note*) says that *sagamo* is a Montagnais word; and he cites Laflèche as deriving it from *tchi* and *okimau*, meaning "great chief."

17. (p. 73)—Berosus (325–255 B. C., *circa*), a Chaldean priest, astrologer, and historian. His best known work is the *Babylonica*, a history of Babylonia; its remaining fragments have been repro-

duced by several European writers, especially in Richter's *Berosi Chald. Historiæ quae supersunt* (Leipsic, 1825).

18. (p. 75)—The Tolosains were a tribe of the Volcæ of Gaul. Another tribe of the Volcæ were the Tectosages—so called from their *sagum* (frock or cloak).

19. (p. 75)—Membertou was chief of all the Micmac groups from Gaspé to Cape S[redacted]. Champlain writes, that he was "a friendly savage, althou[redacted]had the name of being the worst and most traitorous man[redacted]is tribe." Lescarbot called him "the *chef d'œuvre* of Christian piety," and Biard had strong faith in him. He claimed to remember the first visit of Cartier (1534).

20. (p. 77)—Biard, six years later, complains bitterly of this overhaste in baptizing, declaring that these savages, when he went among them in 1611, did not know the first principles of the Faith, and had even forgotten their Christian names.

21. (p. 81)—In the original edition, pp. 25 and 26, apparently through an error in make-up, are verbal repetitions of the two preceding pages. This duplication has been omitted in the present edition.

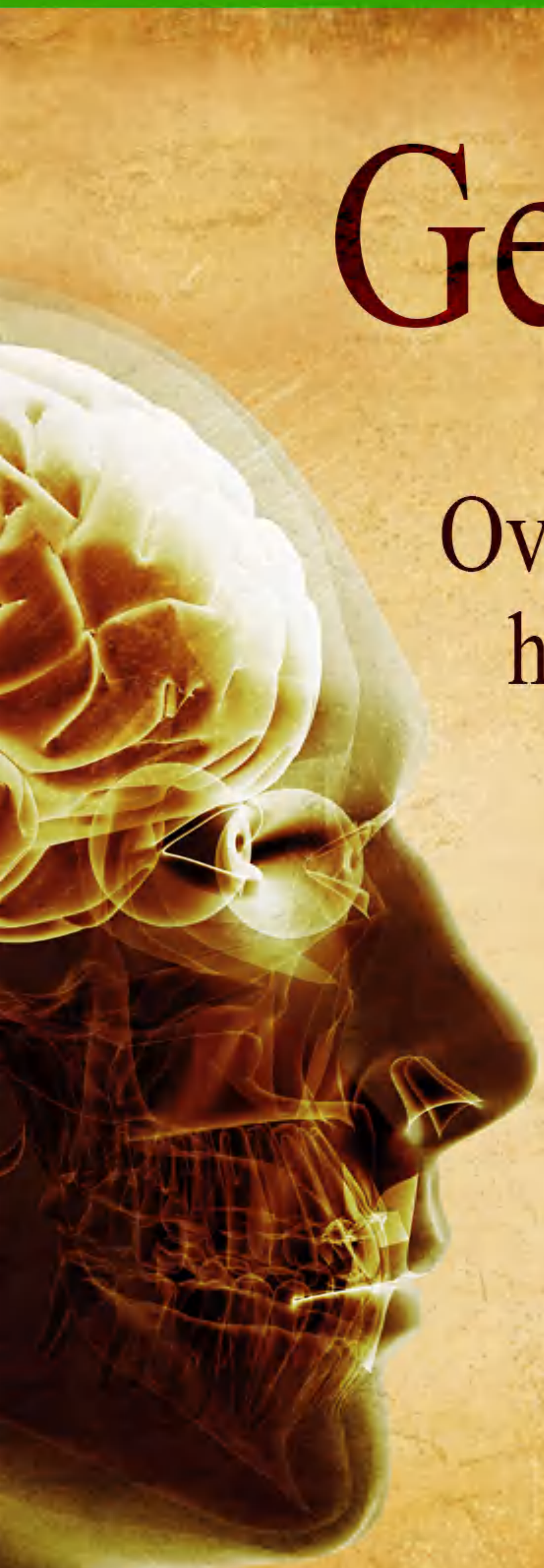
22. (p. 105)—Marked changes occurred in the population of the St. Lawrence valley, between the visits of Cartier (1535) and Champlain (1603). Morgan, in *League of the Iroquois* (Rochester, 1851), p. 5, maintains the correctness of a tradition that the aborigines whom Cartier found at Hochelaga were Iroquois, and that they then were subject to the Algonkins, whom Champlain found in possession of the valley. Cf. Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 208, and Schoolcraft's *Hist. of Indian Tribes of the U. S.*, vol. vi., pp. 33, 188. For further treatment of the migrations of the Iroquois, see Introduction to Hale's *Iroquois Book of Rites* (Phila., 1883), and Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 524, *et seq.*

23. (p. 107)—*Tabagie.* A feast described fully in one of the later Relations.

24. (p. 107)—This easy victory of the French and Algonkins over the Iroquois (July 29, 1609), on the western shores of Lake Champlain, cost New France dearly, as it secured for the struggling colony the deadly enmity of the most warlike savages on the continent, for nearly a century and a half. It was impossible for New France to make permanent headway when sapped by such an enemy. Slafter's exhaustive notes to *Champlain's Voyages* (Prince Soc.), vol. i., p. 91, and vol. ii., p. 223, make it clear that the site of this momentous skirmish was Ticonderoga.

25. (p. 109)—Jessé Fléché, a secular priest from the diocese of Langres, was invited by Poutrincourt to accompany the first colony to Acadia. The papal nuncio gave him authority to absolve in all

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

chaps. v.–viii.; also, R. P. Felix Martin's *Life of R. P. Pierre Biard*, S. J. (Montreal, 1890).

28. (p. 127)—Claude Aquaviva, S. J., born 1544; elected general of the Society of Jesus, 1581; died, 1615; a Neapolitan nobleman; chamberlain of the Court of Rome; fifth general of the order, and ranked by some historians as its ablest legislator and second founder. See Nicolini's *History of the Jesuits*, pp. 210, 257.

29. (p. 127)—Fathers Biard and Massé sailed January 26.

30. (p. 129)—*Brother-coadjutor.* The six classes of the order of Jesuits were: (1) novices, (2) lay-brothers, (3) scholars, (4) coadjutors, (5) Jesuits of the Third Order, and (6) Jesuits of the Fourth Order. See Thomas D'Arcy McGee's *Lecture on the Jesuits.*

31. (p. 133)—Biencourt and Robin de Coulogne, not having means to equip and provision the vessel which was to convey Biard and Massé to Port Royal, made an arrangement with Dujardin and Duquesne, two merchants of Dieppe, by which the latter undertook to furnish the equipment and supplies in consideration of being admitted as partners in Poutrincourt's fur-trading and cod-fishing enterprise. Concerning this *Contract d'Association des Jésuites au Trafique du Canada*, made January 20, 1611, see Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 288, *note.* Cf. also, Rochemonteix's *Jésuites*, vol. i., p. 32. These partners, being Huguenots, objected to the shipment of the Jesuits, but finally sold their interests for 2,800 livres to Madame de Guercheville, whose part in this expedition is related in note 33, *post.* See Biard's succeeding letter, for fuller details of this adventure.

32. (p. 133)—*Formal order of the Queen.* October 7, 1610, the young King, Louis XIII., wrote from Monceaux to Baron de Poutrincourt: "Monsieur de Poutrincourt, as Father Pierre Biard and Father Ennemond Massé, religious of the Society of Jesus, are being sent over to New France to celebrate the divine services of the church and to preach the Gospel to the people of that country, I wish to hereby recommend them to you, that you may, upon all occasions, assist and protect them in the exercise of their noble and holy calling, assuring you that I shall consider it a great service."

The Queen Mother also wrote: "Monsieur de Poutrincourt, now that the good Jesuit Fathers are about to try, under the authority of the King, my son, to establish our faith over there, I hereby request you to give them, for the success of this good work, all the courtesy and assistance in your power, as a service very near our heart, and very acceptable to us, praying God, Monsieur de Poutrincourt, to keep you under his holy and watchful care."—David Asseline's *Antiquities and Chronicles of the City of Dieppe*

(Dieppe, 1874; 2 vols.) The letters are reproduced in Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., p. 102.

33. (p. 135)—Antoinette de Pons, Marquise de Guercheville, patroness of Jesuit missions in New France, was lady of honor to Marie de Médicis, and accounted one of the most beautiful and zealously religious women of her time. Taking up the defence of the Jesuits against Poutrincourt, she not only bought the ship in which to transport them to America, but the cargo and the royal patent of De Monts, thus succeeding the latter as proprietor of all Acadia, excepting Port Royal, which still remained in Poutrincourt's possession. Concerning her rupture with De Monts, see Shea's *Charlevoix*, vol. i., p. 274. She resolved to plant a strictly Catholic colony at Pentagoet (site of Bangor, Me.), and sent out, under La Saussaye, some fifty settlers and three Jesuit missionaries (1613). Upon reaching Port Royal, they were joined by Biard and Massé, and thence proceeded to the eastern side of Mount Desert Island. For the location of their mission, St. Sauveur, see Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 304, *note*. The descent of the English under Argall (1613), was the end of Madame de Guercheville's mission. See *N. Y. Colonial Documents*, vol. iii., pp. 1, 2, concerning reparation allowed her by the government of Great Britain for the loss of her vessel. Cf. Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 110–117; and Baird's *Hug. Emig.*, vol. i., p. 103. Upon the queen regent's high regard for the Jesuits, see *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 101, 102.

34. (p. 141)—Several of the old French coins were called écus. They date from the period of Charles VII.,—*écus à la couronne*, or crowns of gold, from the crown which formed the type of the reverse.—Prime's *Coins, Medals, and Seals*, p. 150. The écu of Louis XIV. is first given in Dye's *Coin Encyclopedia*, p. 621; value in United States currency, $1.108. The early écu was equal to three francs; later, to about five.

35. (p. 141)—*Viaticum.* In Père de Ravignan's *On the Existence and Institutions of the Jesuits* (Paris, 1862), p. 190, *note* ii., mention is made of a custom in connection with the viaticum of missionaries, which was frequently observed at this time. The founders or benefactors of missions, in order to obtain with greater certainty and abundance the money which they intended for missionary work in distant lands, charged the merchants, who acted as agents, to sell the merchandise which they consigned to them, and to remit the price of it to the missionaries for their support. Thus Madame de Guercheville furnished considerable money to Biencourt to invest in the fish and fur trade, which he was about to undertake, with the sole condition that, for her share, he should sup-

port the missionaries. See Rochemonteix's *Jésuites*, vol. i., pp. 35–36, *note*.

36. (p. 141) — The Marchioness de Verneuil furnished their chapel, Madame de Sourdis their vestments and linen, and Madame de Guercheville provided other necessaries.— *Annuæ Litteræ S. J.*, an. 1612, p. 570.

Madame de Verneuil founded a convent of Annunciades, and gave her declining years to religion. She died at Paris, 1633, aged 54.

37. (p. 143) — In his *Relation* of 1616, chap. xi., Biard says: "Thomas Robin de Coulogne enjoyed a modest fortune; he had often heard about New France from the Dieppe merchants, and had wished to mingle in this colonization movement. What Baron de Poutrincourt told him about the attempts made at Port Royal pleased him greatly, and he promised to assist him."

The names of Monsieur de Coullogne (Coulogne) and of Madame de Sigogne (Sicoine) appear in Fléché's list of baptisms, *ante*. Other contemporary spellings of Coulogne are: Cologne, Coloigne, and Coloine.

38. (p. 147) — This is an interesting, and we believe a unique statement of Biard, that the islands off the Gulf of St. Lawrence were once called the "Azores of the Great Bank." The maps of many early cartographers and navigators represent Newfoundland as a group of islands, or a large island with a circlet of smaller ones, or "almost a single island."—See Winsor's *N. and C. Hist.*, vol. i., pp. 74, 77, 79, 93, 379. As Newfoundland was the first land sighted by voyagers in New France, and as their last sight of land had been the Azores, the naming of the islands of the Great Bank the Azores is in keeping with their custom in this regard.

39. (p. 149) — Ennemond Massé, S. J., born at Lyons, 1574; died at Sillery, Canada, 1646; admitted to the Society of Jesus at the age of twenty, and assigned to a chair of theology in Lyons; in 1608, chosen by Father Coton to accompany Biard to Acadia. He was again sent to Canada in 1625, with Charles Lalemant, Jean de Brébeuf, and two lay brothers. During the English occupation of Canada (1629–32), he was in France, but returned with Brébeuf in 1633. Rochemonteix (*Jésuites*, vol. i., p. 24) says of him: "Of an impetuous and violent nature, he had all he could do to restrain it. But, by vigilance and perseverance, he conquered it so well that he no longer seemed to have any strong impulses or passions. Industrious, unwearying, of robust health, he was prepared for the hardships of a distant mission by a life of penitence and denial, frequently fasting, sleeping upon hard boards, accustoming his taste to everything, and his body to extreme cold and heat. Although innocent as a child, he led the life of a penitential anchorite; in

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

43. (p. 163)—People from St. Malo, France. Spelled also by Biard, *post*, Malouines.

44. (p. 169)—Robert, the son of Pontgravé, who had escaped from custody, and had been in hiding in the forest. See Parkman's *Pioneers*, pp. 265, 290; also, Lescarbot's reference to him, *ante*.

45. (p. 181)—Referring to Queen Blanche of Castile (1187–1252), regent after the death of her husband, Louis VIII., during the absence of her son, Louis IX. (Saint Louis), in the Holy Land.

46. (p. 197)—Joseph Jouvency (also written Juvency, Jouvenci, and Jouvancy), Jesuit historian, an eminent litterateur of his time. Born in Paris, September 14, 1643; died at Rome, May 29, 1719. In 1659, he was admitted to the Society of Jesus, for many years filling the position of professor of rhetoric at La Flèche, and devoting much time to historical and classical research. After taking his vows in 1677, he was sent to Rome, as one of the staff of writers upon *Historia Societatis Jesu*.

47. (p. 197)—Count Ernest von Mansfeld, soldier of fortune, conspicuous in the Thirty Years War. Born, 1585; died, 1626, soon after his defeat by Wallenstein at the bridge of Dessau. His great army of mercenaries was, according to Motley (*John of Barneveld*, vol. ii., p. 32), "the earliest type, perhaps, of the horrible military vermin destined to feed so many years on the unfortunate dismembered carcass of Germany." Cf. Kohlrausch's *History of Germany* (Haas trans.), pp. 320, 326. Concerning the campaign of Louis XIII., against the Huguenots (1622), and Count von Mansfeld's part therein, see Kitchin's *History of France*, pp. 497, 498.

48. (p. 199)—Philip Alegambe, a Jesuit scholar (Flemish). Died in 1652, while superior of the house of his order at Rome. He was the leading writer upon *Bibliotheca Scriptorum Societatis Jesu* (1643).

49. (p. 219)—*Seven Islands*. A group at the mouth of the St. Lawrence River, near the northerly shore of the gulf.

50. (p. 219)—Chicoutimi River, rising in numerous small lakes near Lake St. John, pursues a picturesque course, frequently interrupted by rapids, eastward and northeastward into the Saguenay. At the junction, seventy-five miles above the mouth of the latter, is now the important lumber-shipping port of Chicoutimi, at whose wharves ocean-going vessels are laden. The old missionary district of that name included the rugged country lying south and southwest of Lake St. John.

51. (p. 221)—The French Jesuits definitely abandoned the Iroquois field in 1687, owing to the rising power of the English. In 1701, Bruyas was again on the ground, being joined the year following by De Lamberville, Garnier, and Le Valliant, and later by

D'Hue and De Marieul. The entire party was driven out in 1708, and many of their Iroquois converts retired with them to the mission of Caughnawaga, near Montreal.

52. (p. 221)—The Iroquois Mission of St. Francis Xavier was founded in 1669 by Iroquois Christians,—emigrants from the "castles" of the Five Nations. The mission was finally removed to Sault St. Louis, on the St. Lawrence, and called Caughnawaga, from the Indian village of that name on the Mohawk, where had also been a Jesuit mission.

53. (p. 221)—Lake Michigan. Called Lac des Puants on Champlain's map of 1632, in reference to the Winnebago tribe (Puants) on Green Bay; in several of the *Relations*, and on Marquette's map (1674), it is styled Lac des Illinois, from the Illinois Indians upon its southern coast; Allouez calls it (1675) Lac St. Joseph, because of Fort and River St. Josephs on the southeast coast; Coronelli's map (1688) honors the Dauphin by calling the lake after him; Hennepin comes the nearest to modern usage, in his name, Michigonong.

54. (p. 221)—Lake Huron, which has figured under many titles, in the old maps and chronicles. This name has reference to the Indian family upon its eastern shores. Champlain first named it La Mer Douce ("The Fresh Sea"), and later Lac des Attigouantan, after the chief tribe of the Hurons; Sanson's map (1657) names it Karegnondi; Coronelli's map (1688) christens it Lac d'Orleans; Colden in one place gives it as Quatoghe, and in another as Caniatare. Lac des Hurons first appears in the map accompanying the *Relation* for 1670–71.

55. (p. 221)—The mission of St. Ignace was founded by Marquette, in 1670, on Point St. Ignace, on the mainland north of and opposite the Island of Michillimackinac (now shortened to Mackinaw or Mackinac, as fancy dictates). The term Michillimackinac, variously spelled, was applied by the earliest French not only to the island and straits of that name, but in general to the great peninsula lying north of the straits.

56. (p. 221)—The mission of Sault Ste. Marie, at the outlet of Lake Superior, was founded by Raimbault and Jogues in 1640. The place was always an important rallying-point for the natives, and naturally became the center of a wide-spreading fur trade, which lasted, under French, English, and American dominations in turn, until about 1840.

57. (p. 221)—The Western mission of St. Francis Xavier was founded by Allouez in 1669, at the first rapids in the Fox River (of Green Bay), on the east side of the river, in what is now the city of Depere, Wis. An important Indian village had from the earliest historic times been located there.

58. (p. 223)— Outaouaki = Ottawas; Puteatamis = Pottawattomies; Kikarous = Kickapoos; Outagamies = Foxes; Oumiamis = Miamis.

59. (p. 223)— Bayagoulas, one of the Louisiana missions, of which Father Paul du Ru, S. J., was in charge in 1700. Shea's *Catholic Missions*, p. 443.

60. (p. 227)— An anonymous writer in *The Catholic World*, (vol xii., p. 629) makes the statement that Quentin and Du Thet were sent out to replace Biard and Massé "if they had perished; otherwise to return to France." Contemporary writers, however, speak of their coming as a reinforcement.

61. (p. 227)— On what came to be known as Frenchman's Bay, on the east side of the island of Mount Desert. Parkman says (*Pioneers*, ed. 1865, p. 276, *note*): "Probably all of Frenchman's Bay was included under the name of the Harbor of St. Sauveur. The landing-place so called seems to have been near the entrance of the bay, certainly south of Bar Harbor. The Indian name of the Island of Mount Desert was Penetic. Its present name was given by Champlain."

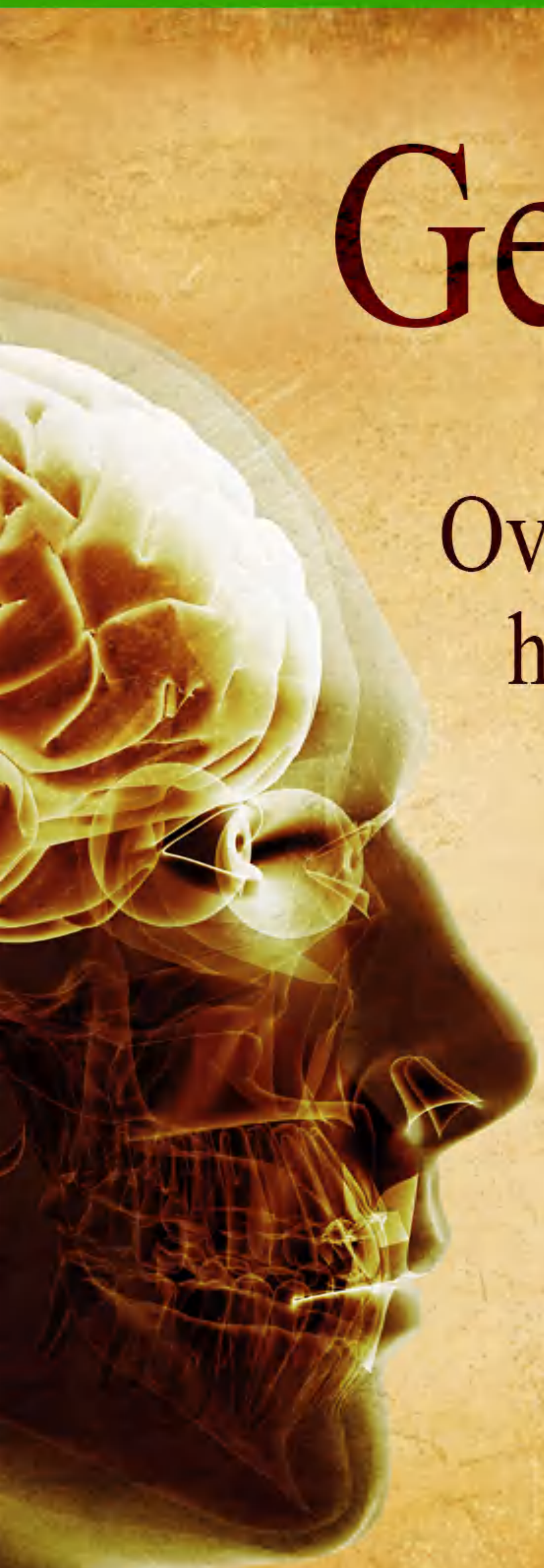
62. (p. 227)— The "Jonas," conspicuous in the annals of Acadia from the time in which Poutrincourt and Lescarbot sailed in her for Port Royal, in 1606, to her capture by Argall in 1613. Parkman aptly calls her "the 'Mayflower' of the Jesuits."

63. (p. 229)— Samuel Argall, born in Bristol, England, 1572; died, 1639. See Cooke's *Virginia* (Amer. Commonwealths ser.), pp. 111–113, for a fair estimate of this tempestuous character. Folsom's "Expedition of Captain Samuel Argal," in *N. Y. Hist. Colls.* (new ser.), vol. i., pp. 333–342, goes over that ground quite completely.

64. (p. 231)— Sir Thomas Dale, the predecessor of Argall as governor of Virginia; he was in the service of the Low Countries, 1588–95, and 1606–10; in 1611, he entered the service of the Virginia Company, where he remained five years as governor of the colony; and in 1619 he died at Masulipatam, while in command of an expedition to the East Indies.

65. (p. 233)— The charge was freely made at the time, that Biard and Massé, incensed at Biencourt, who had been unkind to them, piloted Argall to Port Royal. Poutrincourt and Lescarbot, disliking the Jesuits, naturally believed it, and the former addressed the French admiralty court on the subject, under the date of July 18, 1614.— See Lescarbot's *Nouv. France*, book v., chap. 14. Champlain discredited the charge, saying that Argall compelled an Indian to serve as pilot. Cf. Parkman's *Pioneers*, pp. 313 *et seq.*, and Biard's own statements, *post* (Letter to T.-R. Général, May 6, 1614; and *Relation* of 1616).

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



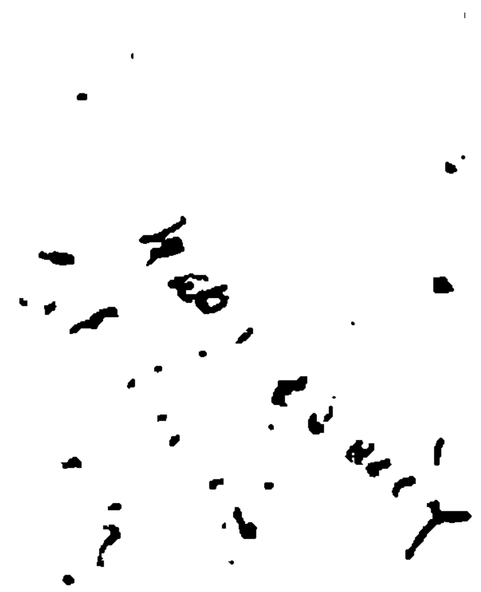
Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Never be without a book!

Forgotten Books Full Membership gives universal access to 797,885 books from our apps and website, across all your devices: tablet, phone, e-reader, laptop and desktop computer

A library in your pocket for $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

14 DAY USE

RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED

LOAN DEPT

RETURN TO ⟶ CIRCULATION DEPARTMENT
202 Main Library

LOAN PERIOD 1 **HOME USE**	2	3
4	5	6

ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS
1-month loans may be renewed by calling 642-3405
1-year loans may be recharged by bringing the books to the Circulation Desk
Renewals and recharges may be made 4 days prior to due date

DUE AS STAMPED BELOW

RECEIVED SEP 09 1984	JUN 06 REC'D JUL 29 1987	JAN 04 1993
CIRCULATION DEPT.		NOV 10 1992
NOV 30 1986 AUTO. DISC. DEC 4 86	AUTO DISC JUL 30 1987	CIRCULATION
	JAN 14 1989	
LIBRARY USE ONLY JUN 24 1987 CIRCULATION DEPT.	AUTO DISC MAY 1990 JUN 03 1991 Returned by	JUL 16 2000
RECEIVED BY JUN 24 1987	JUN 05 1991 Santa Cruz Library	
CIRCULATION DEPT.		

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, BERKELEY
FORM NO. DD6, 60m, 1/83 BERKELEY, CA 94720

GENERAL LIBRARY - U.C. BERKELEY

B000903553

A. 7

118 110 F1030
.7
J4
v.1

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY.

duced by several European writers, especially in Richter's *Berosi Chald. Historiæ quae supersunt* (Leipsic, 1825).

18. (p. 75)—The Tolosains were a tribe of the Volcæ of Gaul. Another tribe of the Volcæ were the Tectosages—so called from their *sagum* (frock or cloak).

19. (p. 75)—Membertou was chief of all the Micmac groups from Gaspé to Cape S[redacted]. Champlain writes, that he was "a friendly savage, althou[redacted]had the name of being the worst and most traitorous man[redacted]is tribe." Lescarbot called him "the *chef d'œuvre* of Christian piety," and Biard had strong faith in him. He claimed to remember the first visit of Cartier (1534).

20. (p. 77)—Biard, six years later, complains bitterly of this overhaste in baptizing, declaring that these savages, when he went among them in 1611, did not know the first principles of the Faith, and had even forgotten their Christian names.

21. (p. 81)—In the original edition, pp. 25 and 26, apparently through an error in make-up, are verbal repetitions of the two preceding pages. This duplication has been omitted in the present edition.

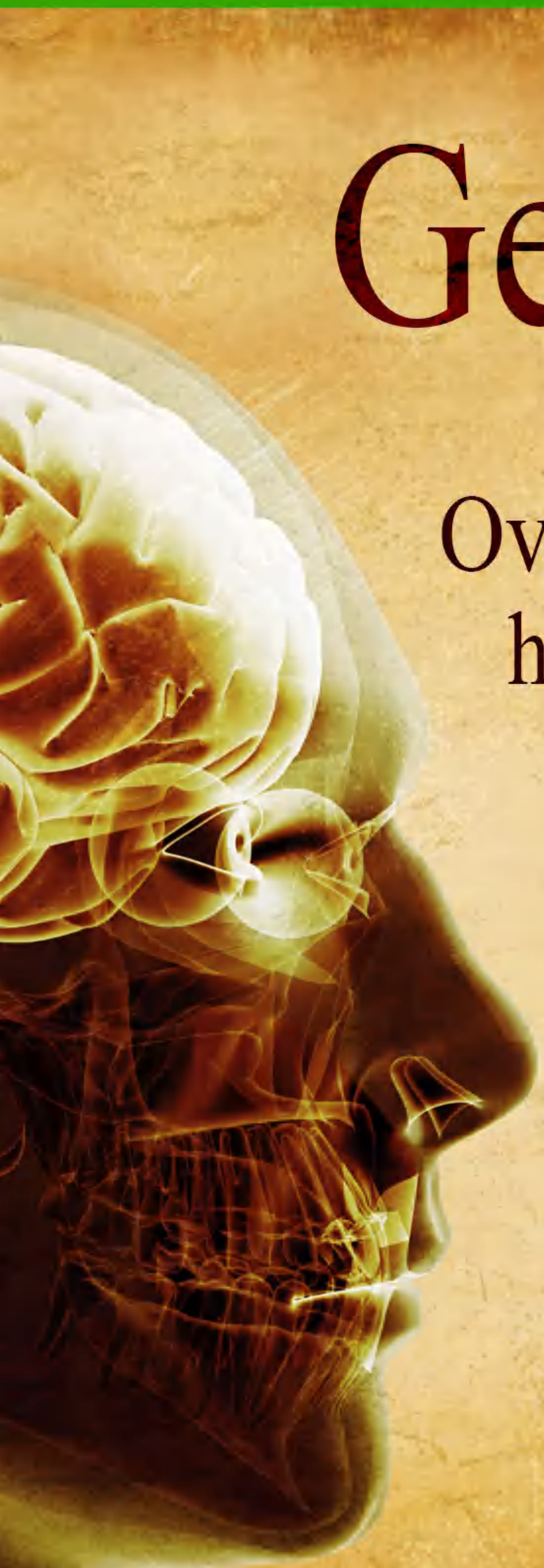
22. (p. 105)—Marked changes occurred in the population of the St. Lawrence valley, between the visits of Cartier (1535) and Champlain (1603). Morgan, in *League of the Iroquois* (Rochester, 1851), p. 5, maintains the correctness of a tradition that the aborigines whom Cartier found at Hochelaga were Iroquois, and that they then were subject to the Algonkins, whom Champlain found in possession of the valley. Cf. Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 208, and Schoolcraft's *Hist. of Indian Tribes of the U. S.*, vol. vi., pp. 33, 188. For further treatment of the migrations of the Iroquois, see Introduction to Hale's *Iroquois Book of Rites* (Phila., 1883), and Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 524, *et seq.*

23. (p. 107)—*Tabagie.* A feast described fully in one of the later Relations.

24. (p. 107)—This easy victory of the French and Algonkins over the Iroquois (July 29, 1609), on the western shores of Lake Champlain, cost New France dearly, as it secured for the struggling colony the deadly enmity of the most warlike savages on the continent, for nearly a century and a half. It was impossible for New France to make permanent headway when sapped by such an enemy. Slafter's exhaustive notes to *Champlain's Voyages* (Prince Soc.), vol. i., p. 91, and vol. ii., p. 223, make it clear that the site of this momentous skirmish was Ticonderoga.

25. (p. 109)—Jessé Fléché, a secular priest from the diocese of Langres, was invited by Poutrincourt to accompany the first colony to Acadia. The papal nuncio gave him authority to absolve in all

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of human knowledge in 797,885 volumes

Instant access $8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

chaps. v.–viii.; also, R. P. Felix Martin's *Life of R. P. Pierre Biard*, S. J. (Montreal, 1890).

28. (p. 127)—Claude Aquaviva, S. J., born 1544; elected general of the Society of Jesus, 1581; died, 1615; a Neapolitan nobleman; chamberlain of the Court of Rome; fifth general of the order, and ranked by some historians as its ablest legislator and second founder. See Nicolini's *History of the Jesuits*, pp. 210, 257.

29. (p. 127)—Fathers Biard and Massé sailed January 26.

30. (p. 129)—*Brother-coadjutor*. The six classes of the order of Jesuits were: (1) novices, (2) lay-brothers, (3) scholars, (4) coadjutors, (5) Jesuits of the Third Order, and (6) Jesuits of the Fourth Order. See Thomas D'Arcy McGee's *Lecture on the Jesuits*.

31. (p. 133)—Biencourt and Robin de Coulogne, not having means to equip and provision the vessel which was to convey Biard and Massé to Port Royal, made an arrangement with Dujardin and Duquesne, two merchants of Dieppe, by which the latter undertook to furnish the equipment and supplies in consideration of being admitted as partners in Poutrincourt's fur-trading and cod-fishing enterprise. Concerning this *Contract d'Association des Jésuites au Trafique du Canada*, made January 20, 1611, see Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 288, *note*. Cf. also, Rochemonteix's *Jésuites*, vol. i., p. 32. These partners, being Huguenots, objected to the shipment of the Jesuits, but finally sold their interests for 2,800 livres to Madame de Guercheville, whose part in this expedition is related in note 33, *post*. See Biard's succeeding letter, for fuller details of this adventure.

32. (p. 133)—*Formal order of the Queen*. October 7, 1610, the young King, Louis XIII., wrote from Monceaux to Baron de Poutrincourt: "Monsieur de Poutrincourt, as Father Pierre Biard and Father Ennemond Massé, religious of the Society of Jesus, are being sent over to New France to celebrate the divine services of the church and to preach the Gospel to the people of that country, I wish to hereby recommend them to you, that you may, upon all occasions, assist and protect them in the exercise of their noble and holy calling, assuring you that I shall consider it a great service."

The Queen Mother also wrote: "Monsieur de Poutrincourt, now that the good Jesuit Fathers are about to try, under the authority of the King, my son, to establish our faith over there, I hereby request you to give them, for the success of this good work, all the courtesy and assistance in your power, as a service very near our heart, and very acceptable to us, praying God, Monsieur de Poutrincourt, to keep you under his holy and watchful care."—David Asseline's *Antiquities and Chronicles of the City of Dieppe*

(Dieppe, 1874; 2 vols.) The letters are reproduced in Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., p. 102.

33. (p. 135)—Antoinette de Pons, Marquise de Guercheville, patroness of Jesuit missions in New France, was lady of honor to Marie de Médicis, and accounted one of the most beautiful and zealously religious women of her time. Taking up the defence of the Jesuits against Poutrincourt, she not only bought the ship in which to transport them to America, but the cargo and the royal patent of De Monts, thus succeeding the latter as proprietor of all Acadia, excepting Port Royal, which still remained in Poutrincourt's possession. Concerning her rupture with De Monts, see Shea's *Charlevoix*, vol. i., p. 274. She resolved to plant a strictly Catholic colony at Pentagoet (site of Bangor, Me.), and sent out, under La Saussaye, some fifty settlers and three Jesuit missionaries (1613). Upon reaching Port Royal, they were joined by Biard and Massé, and thence proceeded to the eastern side of Mount Desert Island. For the location of their mission, St. Sauveur, see Parkman's *Pioneers*, p. 304, *note*. The descent of the English under Argall (1613), was the end of Madame de Guercheville's mission. See *N. Y. Colonial Documents*, vol. iii., pp. 1, 2, concerning reparation allowed her by the government of Great Britain for the loss of her vessel. Cf. Faillon's *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 110–117; and Baird's *Hug. Emig.*, vol. i., p. 103. Upon the queen regent's high regard for the Jesuits, see *Col. Fr.*, vol. i., pp. 101, 102.

34. (p. 141)—Several of the old French coins were called écus. They date from the period of Charles VII.,—*écus à la couronne*, or crowns of gold, from the crown which formed the type of the reverse.—Prime's *Coins, Medals, and Seals*, p. 150. The écu of Louis XIV. is first given in Dye's *Coin Encyclopedia*, p. 621; value in United States currency, $1.108. The early écu was equal to three francs; later, to about five.

35. (p. 141)—*Viaticum*. In Père de Ravignan's *On the Existence and Institutions of the Jesuits* (Paris, 1862), p. 190, *note* ii., mention is made of a custom in connection with the viaticum of missionaries, which was frequently observed at this time. The founders or benefactors of missions, in order to obtain with greater certainty and abundance the money which they intended for missionary work in distant lands, charged the merchants, who acted as agents, to sell the merchandise which they consigned to them, and to remit the price of it to the missionaries for their support. Thus Madame de Guercheville furnished considerable money to Biencourt to invest in the fish and fur trade, which he was about to undertake, with the sole condition that, for her share, he should sup-